

## MY MASTER

.

.

My name is Amelia and when I turned 18 I ran away from home. I packed all my things into my bag and moved into my friends house . I knew that I had to find a job in order to help pay for things but people don't hire anyone really without a college degree. I decided to roam the internet maybe just something. I came across a website were people would sell themselves for money. Pretty much have sex get your brains fucked for some cash. I had 2 days to come up with my part of the rent so I figured why not give it a shot. I created a profile but with a fake name and submitted it. I was technically a virgin. I had only made out with a guy, given blow jobs and had jobs but never had a cock inside of me. It wasn't within 5 minutes I gotten several hits and messages guys wanting to meet with me tonight or asap if possible. Looking through all the profile all of them looked like creepers or just got a bad feeling about. I just moved on to the next one. Within 10 minutes I came across a guy who only had pictures of his body. The only one of his face was dark. He messaged me asking how my day was going? The rest just asked when can we meet or can I fuck you tonight? He actually asked how I was doing. I replied back saying not that bad could be better. It wasn't within a minute he was writing me back telling me he was sorry that I was having a bad day etc etc. We continued to talk for 2 hours about or lives and how old we were etc. He didn't get into the whole sex talk but I knew it would come up. He finally asked why I was on this website. I just sighed and said I need the money honestly. He said he was sorry that he knows how I feel he had been in the same boat once in his life. I decided to tell him I was a virgin before any thing else went further. He said it was alright he would be gentle and walk me through anything and everything he was going to do to me or what I wanted to do to him. I finally agreed to meet him. It was almost midnight and he said he was in town on business that he visits here often that he was at a hotel. He gave me the hotel name address and what room number he was in. He said he would understand if I didn't show up but would hope I would. I got off the computer and went to my closet pulled out a short black skirt and red tank top and thigh high boots put them on. And just sighed I was going to do this I needed to do this. I walked out side got in my car, put the address in my GPS and went. I pulled up into the parking lot feeling my heart race faster than it ever has. But I swallowed sucked up and went inside. I got in the elevator pressed the number to the 4th floor. Got out and walked down the hall way to room 437. I stood in front of it getting the courage enough to knock. I reached up and knocked. Hearing foot steps walking up to the door hearing it being unlocked and slowly being open. I looked up to this tall dark haired man. Wearing only pajama pants. Deep green eyes. Muscular and very attractive. "I am glad you showed up" he said walking backwards opening the door all the way letting me walk in. I just sighed walked in as he shut the door behind me and locked it

## MY MASTER

#2

.

.

I walked my way into the room. It was a simple hotel room but could tell experience. I turned around to him standing right behind me. It was kinda creepy but I knew what I was there for and so did he. He didn't waste any time and grabbed my face shoving his tongue in to my mouth. I just kissed him back running my tongue along his he was being a little rough but it was actually turning me on. I felt his hands reach around start grabbing my ass really hard pulling me close into him hard. I wrapped my arms around his waist as he walked me backwards to the edge of the bed. Feeling his rough big hands start going up the front of my skirt running them over the top of my pussy feeling myself already starting to get wet. He stopped kissing me and dropped down to his knees in front of me. He slide down my skirt then my black thong I had on. He looked at my pussy starting to drip and started to lick his lips. He forced his face into my pussy lips starting to eat me out roughly feeling his tongue run up and down my lips inside of me. I just put my hands on the top of his head and started moaning that it did feel good. I could my orgasm coming as I could feel my legs start to shake and push the back of his head into my wet pussy. I pulled the back of his hair as I started to cum all over his face. I was breathing heavy trying to catch my breath as he looked up at me.

.

Him: Did you enjoy it?

Me: Yes

.

I whispered smiling at him.

.

Him: (grinned evilly) good, Thats the only one your going to get unless you have my permission

.

he said standing up starring into my eyes. Those dark deep sexy eyes had turned dark evil and cold.

.

Me: Excuse me?

Him: you fucking heard me now lay down bitch

.

I tried to duck around him and make my escape but he grabbed me and threw me down on the bed. .

.

Him: You're not going nowhere

.

he said getting on top of me he reached down and pulled off my boots. Then lifted up my shirt I didn't wear my bra and he just smiled at my boobs. They weren't too big and not too small.

.

Him: (smiled) I am going to do things to you, you only hear about in movies you are mine and mine

alone

.  
he growled at me. He slide down his pants not wearing any boxers or briefs. Just to a hard thick cock. Twitching up at me. I knew that big cock was about to crush my pussy. Popping my cherry. And I know its going to hurt. I tried getting up and he pushed me back down

.  
Him: don't try it bitch

.  
I closed my eyes starting to feel the tears falling down. He was going to rape me. He was going to rape.He reached over to the table and grabbed a condom off of the night stand guiding him back sliding the condom over his dick.

.  
Him: Just for tonight after tonight I am going bare on your virgin ass

.  
He leaned down guiding himself in between my legs. Feeling his thick big cock pressed against my pussy. It was throbbing his cock knew what it was about to do. And him and his dick are going to enjoy it. He bite the side of my neck pushing the edge of my pussy whole. I could feel the pressure of it. This was going to hurt. He looked up at me grinning evil and going down and bite my right nipple really hard as he shoved his whole dick all at once in to my pussy. I screamed out in pain as he was all the way inside of me. He bite my nipple harder and he pulled it out and shoved it in harder this time. I continued to scream louder it really did hurt he was stretching me out so bad that it was tearing. He started going faster and harder.

.  
Him: Oh yes oh yes my little virgin your pussy oh damn

.  
he went faster and faster. I just closed my eyes as my head was starting to bang against the head board.

.  
Him: Damn baby you're so tight your about to see and feel my cum. Your making me cum so fast

.  
he was thrusting so hard and fast feeling his balls started to smack against my lower pussy.

.  
Him: Ahhh ahhhh ahhh open your mouth whore

.  
he said pulling his dick out pulling the condom off and strocking it.

.  
Him: I said open your fucking mouth

.  
he said climbing up to my face. I couldn't open my mouth so he did it for me. Putting his hands on my jawline making me open it. As he shoved it into my mouth and grabbing the back of my neck and thrusting a few more times.

.  
Him: Ahhhhh take it you better swallow it

.  
he yelled shoving his dick down my throat and feeling his hot load shoot down my throat I had no choice but to swallow it. And honestly didn't taste that good but I didn't want to gag and get beaten. He pulled his cock out of my mouth breathing heavy.

.  
Him: Now get fucking dressed and out of here

.  
he said rolling over. I quickly got up picking up my clothes putting them on in a hurry and going towards the door until I felt his hand on my shoulder and pull me around

.  
Him: remember you are mine now and you will come when I call I fucking own you

.  
he said shoving his tongue into my mouth kissing me.

.  
Him: Now tell me who is your master? Me?

.  
I nodded

.  
Him: Good fucking slave.

.  
as he tucked something in my shirt he said opening the door and shoving me out into the hallway.

.  
MY MASTER

.  
#3

.  
As soon as he shut the door I ran to the stairs and ran the stairs I didn't want to wait for the elevator just incase he was behind me. I got in my car turned it on slammed it into reverse and went home. I got halfway home before I remembered he tucked something in shirt. I was at a redlight and pulled it out. It was money. I unfolded it. It was R200 . I didn't care that I had it I was glad I was out of there. I ran to my room and flopped down on the bed and cried. I can't believe I let someone like that take my virginity. I was disgusted. I heard my phone vibrate and looked at it. I didn't recognize the number but it was a text message. I opened the message and it read:

Remember I own you! See you soon slave. Holy shit it was him. And he didn't have my phone number I never gave it to him

I woke up the next morning actually thinking it was all a dream but the soreness I had in my vagina told me otherwise. I couldn't even walk that straight to the bathroom. I still couldn't believe I lost my virginity to that kind of man. But what could I expect of meeting someone offline. I was hoping he would leave me alone that he was just maybe fucking with me about that he owns me now. But I guess it was something I was going to have to play by ear. I laid back down I didn't even want to get out of bed today. Until I heard the door bell ring. I got out of bed and looked in the eye hole to a delivery man holding flowers. He was probably here to deliver them to my roommate she was in a pretty serious relationship with a guy they had been dating since freshman year of high school. I opened the door. "Delivery for Amelia Peterson" "that's me" I gulped. As he handed me this big arrangement of several different kinds of flowers. "Thank you" I said as I took it from him and walked back inside to my room. I sat it down on my desk and picked up the card that was attached. I was actually scared to even read it. It read: "thank you for a great time last night I will remember it always. I will see you soon that's a promise. Love Andrew" I just dropped the card and thought I was honestly scared shitless that this man found out my address and where I live let alone my cell phone number. I started to cry wondering what else he actually knew about me. I climbed back in bed reached into my nightstand drawer pulled out 3 sleep aid pills and took them. I just needed to not think about that any more. I turned my phone on silent and within 15 minutes I was passed out. I didn't know how long I was asleep but when I opened my eyes the room and outside was dark. I rolled over and to my surprise he was laying in my bed next to me. I started to scream but he quickly covered my mouth with his hand. "Shhh. I was wondering if you were ever going to wake up" he whispered removing his hand and started stroking my hair. "You know I honestly thought you were ignoring your master until I came over and saw you were asleep. So you won't get that much of a punishment tonight" "punishment?" I questioned him. "Well your phone is in silent and master doesn't like that" he said in a seductive way. "Sorry" I said. "Oh don't worry it won't be that bad" he grinned "like last night?" I said "you only wish sweet heart" he said kissing my forehead. "By the way your room mate Jesse texted you she's staying at her boyfriend's house tonight so it's just me and you" he said rolling over on top of me. I could already feel his hard cock pressed up against me. He started shoving his tongue in my mouth then taking my arms and throwing them back behind my head. He reached up and tied them to the headboard. He apparently had already set up the chains and handcuffs while I was sleeping. He reached down and slide my boxers down. And lifted up my shirt I wasn't wearing any panties or bra. I was laying there naked. He slide down and handcuff my feet to the end of the bed. I was stretched out fully naked and had no idea what he was about to do. He leaned over me and kissed me. "Be right back baby" he said as he went into my bathroom. It was a few minutes later he came out butt as naked with a whip in his hand and leather mask over his face. He walked up to me as my heart was jumping out of my chest. He brought the whip over his shoulders and slung it down hard over my body. I screamed out in pain as he kept doing it over and over again. He finally stopped and I looked down at my chest and saw slashes of burns and red marks everywhere some of them

actually starting to bleed. "Are you ever going to hurt me again?" He yelled. "No" I shook my head. "No what whore" he growled. "No master" I said. "Good girl you are learning" he said taking off the mask and sitting up on top of me. The pressure of him on my upper body and along with those burns from the whipping made everything hurt more. His cock was right in my face it was twitching and growing my the second. He leaned up and put the head of his cock on my lips and took it in his hands and started smacking my lips with it. "Open for master" he said. I just barely opened my mouth as he shoved the whole thing in there at once. He grabbed the back of my head and started fucking my mouth. He was jamming his cock so deep down my throat I was starting to cry. But he didn't give a shit he was enjoying it. He grabbed my head tighter as I started tasting his precum. He pulled him self out and slide down bending up my legs and getting in between them. He thrust my hips up as he rammed his cock in my pussy. He was retearing the damage he did last night and it was hurting even more. I started closing my eyes I couldn't even look at him as he was just pounding away at my pussy destroying it really. I kept feeling his dick tearing deeper and deeper inside of me. Like it was a drill just digging thru layers and layers. Pounding away. I could feel my body start to clinch up I knew I was about to cum my body didn't know better it was just reacting to the cock that was inside of it. "That's it slave cum on my big fat dick" he growled as I felt my body release my cum all over him. "Yes yes good girl" he screamed as he continued going faster."ahh shit slave here it comes take it take it all" he screamed letting out a loud moan and growl at the same time feeling his legs shake and seeing his back arch as he filled up my pussy with his man sperm. He collapsed on top of me making the cuts from the whip burn as I could feel the sweat from his chest drip on them. He leaned up and kissed me softly " see that wasn't so bad" he said as my legs were still trembling. He reached up and undid my arms then my legs he laid down next to me and pulled me over to him. "I am going to be staying here tonight" he said kissing me again. I just laid there I didn't know what else to do

.  
. .  
. .

MY MASTER

.  
.

#4

.  
.

I woke up to it still being dark but it was early in the morning. He was gone. I sighed that he was gone. My heart was still pounding that I was stuck with him. I didn't know I could let myself do such a thing. I am sure he knows everything about me. Which scared me even more. I looked up at my desk his flowers he sent were still there. I started crying again I thought there is no way out of this and away from this man. I rolled over and saw 300 hundred rand on the pillow he slept on. With a note that said: now pay your rent and meet me at the same hotel same room when you wake up. I am going to give you until 8 am or you will be punished worse. Love Andrew. I gulped and looked at my watch it was 7 am. I knew that I either had to go or risk the chance of getting killed. There

was a part of me that knew I would be killed if I didn't go. I quickly got up got dressed. Walked into the dining room and put all the money he gave me with a note to my roommate saying this was my part of the rent. I got into my car and drove over there. I got there with 10 minutes to spare stepping out of the elevator and walking to his room. Lifting my hand up and knocking. I heard him walk up and unlocked the door. He opened it up and smiled at me. Another couple started walking down the hall towards us. He picked me up and bear hugged me. Saying oh baby I have missed you so much then kissed me just to put on a show in front of them. As they walked past us smiling he walked back into the room and put me down shutting the door and locking it. He starred at me. "At least your not late" he said kissing me again. "Yes Master" I smiled. "Oh you don't have to call me that today. Today its all going to be about you since you were not late". I didn't know rather to believe him or not. "Don't worry today your going to experience things you only dreamed about" he said kissing me and guiding me to the bed. " I am going to make you cum so much your going to be drained and dry by the time the day is over" he whispered in my ear. "Just relax baby" he said as I could feel his hand start to go up my shirt on to my back undoing my bra. I felt it fall. As he lifted up my shirt and taking my bra off as well. He undid my jeans unzipped them and slide them down. Leaving me laying there only in a pair of black boy shorts. He guided me up to the top of the bed. Kissing me softly. This for aone messed up reason was turning me on. "I am going to make sweet love to you" he whispered kissing me and running his fingers on the outside of ny panties feeling my wetness

I laid there wondering what he would do next. He was kissing me passionately and softy like someone does when they are in love with another person. But how could he be in love with me. He took something from me that I could never get back. I kept feeling my eyes rolling back in my head as he was softly making circles with his tongue on my neck. I just sighed deeply as it was honestly feeling amazing. It was actually turning me on. How could this man be turning me on. To the point I don't want him to stop. I want him to keep going. I want to see what else he would do to me. I mean hes being so gentle right now. I put my hand on the back of his head gripping his hair in my hand as I was moaning a little louder. He knew that I was enjoying it and I really was. I didn't want him to stop. Maybe I could forget everything he has done yeah thats not going to fucking happen. But I can't get it out of my mind that he is turning me on right now as he starts moving down my chest kissing me softly caressing my nipples gently while guiding his hands down my underware. Feeling my pussy just soaken wet. He makes tiny circles around my clit getting my clit harder than it already was. Feeling it start to tremble wanting him to put his tongue around it and suck on it. He slides down my stomach making me moan more and he knows I want him. I really did want him he was making me feel things I have never felt before. He reached my panties and he looked up and smiled at me I smiled back he knew what I wanted and he was going to give it to me. He slide my panties down exposing my ready wet hot pussy to him. He leaned down and started kissing my pussy softly licking it gently at first. Running it up and down. Ahhh God did it feel amazing. I was arching my back having my hands on the back of his head forcing his head deeper into my pussy making his suck on my clit hard making me moan so loud he didn't stop

which was amazing. I started to feel my self start to cum as I arched my hips up grabbing the back of his head harder. "Cum for me baby I want to taste it" as he shoved his tongue deep inside of me feeling so amazing that I just exploded all over his tongue and face. Ahhh did it feel so good. He looked up at me and just smiled and licking his lips. He climbed back on top me kissing my inner thighs then stomach along the way. Making his way up to my lips kissing me. "How do you the way you taste?" He whispered "love it" I sighed. He started kissing me again sliding his tongue in side my mouth slowly and very gentle. I started to feel him wedge himself in between my legs. His cock already rock hard pressing up against my pussy making me more wet than I already am. "Mmmmm baby girl" he said he pushed the head of his cock against my pussy opening teasing me with it. "You want it baby?" He asked. "Uh huh" I smiled. "Say it baby tell me you want it" he said "oh I want your dick please give it to me" I moaned. He rolled his eyes back and pushed his dick inside of me. He was pushing it in slowly actually going slow this time. Letting me feel it go in inch by inch. It made me roll back and gasp as he pushed it all the way. He twitched and grinded himself against me letting his twitch and throb inside of me. It was amazing to be honest. He slowly eased back pulling it in and out. Pushing it back and forth rocking his hips as he went a little faster and deeper each thrust. He looked deep into my eyes as he picked up the speed more. Gently kissing me again. I started to feel myself cum again. "Ahhh ahhh ahh" I moaned. I was cumming hard and he knew it. "Cum for me my baby cum for me" I looked deep inside of his eyes gripping his back and wrapping my legs around his waist as I arched my hips up and screamed loudly as I exploded all over him. I fell back crashing my head on the pillow. He kept going thrusting his cock inside of me. My cum all of his cock making his cock slide quicker and hit my g spot over and over again. "Do you want me to cum inside of you baby?" He asked. I really didn't know what to say but I had to quickly. I wasn't on any birth control and he wasn't using a condom but I didn't want to piss him off. "Yes baby cum inside of me" I moaned seductively. He started going faster looking up at him as he was about to cum. He leaned down and kissed my neck as i wrapped myself around him. He started moaning louder in my ear. "Tell me you love me baby I need to hear it" he said. I just went along with it. "I love you baby" I moaned in his ear as I came on his dick As he thrust deep inside of me grunting louder and twitching as he came all inside of me. He looked at me and smiled kissing me again. "Did you really mean what you said?" He asked. I knew what he meant by that and I just smiled at him and said "Yes baby I do" I knew if I said something different I would get my body tortured in ways I couldn't imagine. "I love you" I said kissing him in a deep passionately way letting him know I was being serious or at least letting him think that. He looked at me and said "Good. This is just round one I told you this is going to be an all day session" he smiled as he kissed me again going into round two. While I was thinking what the fuck did I just do. I just put myself into a bigger yet more horrible situation

.  
. .  
. .  
. .

MY MASTER

.



.  
#5  
.

The whole day we spent having sex over and over again. Didn't really give me a chance to rest or take a breather. It was close to dinner time and the last time he pulled me into the shower with him. While he fucked me up against the wall over and over. I was drained and couldn't even stand up. He leaned me up against the wall and washed my body. Lathering it up with soap and leaning me into the water letting all the soap wash away along with my dignity and self respect. I couldn't believe what I had gotten myself into and if I was even going to get out of it. He turned off the water opened the glass door grabbed the towel off the hanger drying himself off first then stepping out opening his hand out as I took it he pulled me out on to the bathroom mat while he dried me off. I stood there dazed and drained so weak just standing there. He put the towel back turned around and picked me up and carried me back into the room. Laying me on the bed. He put on his boxers and laid up next to me. "Did you enjoy today sweet heart?" He asked. "Yes I did" I smiled at him. "Good" he kissed me. "I am going to have to leave tomorrow and be gone for a few days" he said "Oh" I said. "But you better be good. I will be watching and knowing what you are doing at all times. I do own you and have that right. And if you try any fucking thing you will regret it understand?" He glared at me. "Yes baby I would never mess up what we have" I said "Ok but starting tomorrow it is back to master. Today was your reward day. But I still own you and will have you respect me as your master" he kinda raised his voice. "Yes I understand" I said kissing him assuring him that I understood him. He pulled me into him as we both laid there hoping maybe I could get some sleep. Already watching this man falling asleep on top of me hearing him start to snore a little as I laid there with my arm wrapped around him starring at the ceiling. Thinking what the fuck am I going to do?

.  
I woke up to the sound of the hotel door shutting I looked up at it was him leaving. I got up looking for my clothes. In the heat of the so called passion yesterday they were thrown and landed in various places. I found all of them and got dressed. Got my purse off the night stand. There was a note on top of it which I had no doubt he wouldn't leave without giving me some kind of orders. It said: Today marks new chapter in our relationship slave. You and I have become one and I couldn't be more excited about our future. You are truly the best slave I have ever had and will be mine until the day I die. Your instructions for the next few days are simple. You will check in with me every 2 hours. Rather it be a text message or phone call.but remember you must call me at least 3 times throughout the day. So remember that as well. You will go to bed by 10 pm and be up by 7:30am and I will know if you haven't or don't follow that curfew. It's simple babe you do what I say and we won't have a problem you disobey me and there will be consequences. You thought the other night was bad it can be way worse. Trust me. I am happy you chose me to be your master. I cant wait to show you off. Remember your 2 hours start from when I leave which

was 7 am. My number is already programmed in your phone. Just go home for today and when I hear from you I have a few things I need you to do for me while I am gone. See you soon slave.

Love Andrew

I didn't know what could be worse the fact that I just read this man has had slaves in past and which I am sure he did and what happened to them. I mean for now I guess it can't be that bad. Just do what he says and I wont get beaten. And let him have sex with me. Its going to have to work until I figure out what I am going to do and get away from him some how. I grabbed my purse and left. And just drove home waiting until 9 o'clock so I could "check" in with him

MY MASTER

#6

By the time I got home ate some breakfast and went and settled into my room it was 5 minutes until 9. I figured I would call him this time again in the afternoon and when I went to bed so it would total the 3 times a day. I picked up my phone and found his number he had saved it under Master. I hit call and put it to my ear. For some reason my heart was pounding so much I could hear it in the phone after each ring. It rang 3 times until he answered it. "Well hello you" he said "Hello Master" I said "Good girl you have learned fast" he said "I see you made it home safely"he said "Yes Master I did" I said. I said it really nervously and sad. "What is wrong baby?" He asked. I didn't want to tell him the truth that I was scared shitless of him right now so I just said " I just miss you Master that is all" I said. "I miss you too sweetie I will be home soon and we will be together again" he replied. " Cant be fast enough Master" I said. I was thinking of anything and everything I could just to put him in a good mood. I could hear another guy in the background talking to him. Making a smart ass comment about how is that your new lover girl. And then him calling him an ass hole. "I have to run baby but I am going to text you in a little bit I need you to do something for me ok?" He asked. "Yes Master I will do anything you need me to do" I said. "Ok sweet heart talk to you later. Bye" "Bye Master" I said as I hung up. I guess the phone call wasn't so bad apparently the guy that is with him doesn't know what kind of a person he really is because he kept using words like baby and sweet heart. I decided to throw my sex smelled clothes in the washer and take a shower. I returned to a text message from him. It said. "Very good babe you have learned fast and I love it. I need you to go to this address. 344 sandton ask for a guy named Peter. Tell him I sent you he knows what you are there to get. Talk to you at 11. I got dressed and just went it couldn't be that bad....right?

When I got in my car I sent him a quick text saying I am on my way. He responded quickly by saying thank you my love. My love what the fuck. Maybe this sicko is really falling in love with me. But I got to say I don't share the mutual feelings. He sent another text saying you know you can text me anytime it doesn't have to be every 2 hours. I quickly responded ok master I will because I

really do miss you. I know that saying these things to him is sending him signals that I probably shouldn't be sending but when it comes to life and death I think I will fake it and tell this psycho I love him miss him just so I don't get whipped or beaten again. I was sitting at a red light looking down at my chest I could tell that some of those marks he left are going to be scars. I heard someone honk at me as I was coming back from my lost in thought. I arrived at the place and it looked like an office building. I went inside to a lady sitting behind a desk. She asked if she could help me and I told her I was here to see Peter and that Andrew had sent me. She said alright and disappeared behind in the back. A few minutes past and an older man came back with her introducing himself as Peter and to follow him. I followed him down a hallway to another room he opened the door and asked me to go in and get naked and lay on the table. He shut the door behind me and I quickly got out my phone and texted Andrew wanting to know if he really wanted me to get naked for this man. He quickly replied "yes baby hes a doctor I have to make sure you our in good health and healthy for me for for our future" I replied back "ok Master I will do it" he answered "thank you sweetie. And thank you for running it by me that does mean alot." I guess I had done a good thing and texted him first I guess kudos in his book for me. I just sighed and took off all my clothes and laid up on the table. I felt my phone go off again. It was another text from him "by the way do what ever he says. It will be ok." I thought what the fuck does that mean as this guy walked back into the room. He told me that Andrew pretty much wanted a physical of me and he was going to get it done. He leaned me back on the table checking my head eye's ears nose and mouth. Going down my chest feeling but groping my breasts and lightly pinching my nipples I just turned my head in disgust. He went down my stomach pressing on it. My hips next. He asked me lift my legs up and he sat down in between my legs. Just starring at my vagina. I could hear him breathing heavily his hot breath blowing on my pussy lips. He wanted me and apparently was going to take me. I looked at my watch at it was 5 minutes till 11 I grabbed my phone texting him asking him if this doctor wanted to have sex with me. He replied back I am sure he does baby you are one sexy lady but you better not have sex with him. Once you have sex with someone else besides me you are damaged goods and that means you were unfaithful to me and that's bad punishment. I texted back that I would never be unfaithful to my master. He replied back good my love. I felt the doctor put his fingers around my lips spreading them apart. He slide a finger around making it wet. I could hear him start to moan as he slide a finger in and mummbing "you haven't had much sex in your life have you?" "No Andrew took my virginity the other night actually" I said. "Lucky asshole" he said putting the finger in his mouth and licking it. He walked up to my head and starred down at me. "Look what you are doing to me" he said looking down at his dick that was bulging out of his pants. He leaned down and tried to kiss me. I slapped him across the face and tried to get up he pushed me back down saying he wanted fuck my tight wet pussy better than Andrew would ever do. I pushed him off of me and kneed him in the crotch. I jumped off the table naked and all opened the door to Andrew standing there I jumped at him letting him catch me as I held on to him tightly as he wrapped his arms around me holding me close to him. I was actually glad to see this man. He put me down telling me everything was ok he was there for. He walked into the room picked up my clothes and handed them back to me. "Here babe get dressed and meet me outside" he said shutting the door I quickly got dressed and left as I was leaving I could

hear Andrew yelling at this man calling him every name in the book and heard something being thrown into the wall but I didn't want to wait around and find out

MY MASTER

#7

I waited outside for him. About 15 minutes had past and he came walking out right up to me and hugged me. I was actually glad he showed up. I was glad this psycho was there. "Can I ask you a question Master?" I asked him. "Of course"he said. "Did you know I was in trouble or was that a set up to see if I would be faithful?" I asked. He smiled. "It was both baby. I really did want you to get checked out and I knew what kind of guy he is but he took it further than he was supposed to and I had a bad feeling about it yes thats why I came. He was only supposed to try to make out with you and try to get you to seduce him." He said. "Oh" I said. "But I am proud of you baby I didn't expect you to knee him in the crotch" he laughed "sometimes you have to do what you have to do Master" I said. "Yes you do" he said kissing me. I just kissed him back even though this man took my virginity roughly in a way no woman deserves he just saved me from getting raped. "Can I ask you something sweetie?" He asked. "Yes Master" I said "Do you really love me or just saying those kinds of things to please me" I stood right in front of him starring into his eyes. "Can I do something Master if you don't mind?" I asked. "Yes go ahead" he said. I leaned forward wrapping my arms around his neck pulling him into me. "Yes I do love you. Since you made love to me I have been falling in love with you more and more and I couldn't see noone else in my life but you" I said and pulling his lips into mine kissing him softly and slowly. Making our tongues dance with each others. I pulled away looking deep into his green bold eyes. And just smiled at him. He hugged me tight whispering in my ear " You really do love me I can see it in your eyes. I have been told before by a few that they have loved me but they never meant it I could just see it in their eyes the panic fear that they had to it just to make me happy but baby girl you really do love me" as he kissed the side of my neck. "Yes I do master" I said. "I have waited a long time for someone like you" he whispered. " I want you forever and ever. Will you be mine forever?" He asked. "Yes Master" I said softly. "Good baby because I want to marry you" he said. My heart just stopped and I think my eyes popped out of my eyes. I knew that I had been saying things to him just to make him happy but he either saw right through me and believed it or deep down i am falling for this man and I don't even know it myself. "So my love will you marry me?" He asked pulling away from the hug and starring into my eyes I just stood there..

.  
MY MASTER  
.

.  
#8  
.

.  
I really didn't know what to say. I just I am sure stood there like an idiot. But I can't answer. I mean this man abused me and took my virginity I mean I guess I couldn't say much since i met him on a website designed to meet people have them fuck your brains out for cash. I didn't know him from Adam and I picked him a complete stranger to take my virginity from me which the first time you have sex its supposed to be magically with someone you care about not someone that paid you R200 the first night. Then the next night beats the shit out of you because you had your phone on silent.What else could he do to me if I just slip up a little I mean having your phone on silent and getting beat by a whip and still having the markings to show for it. Let alone more than likely will be scars for the rest of your life. Again a man who digs into your personal life finding out your phone number address and God knows what else. Which I am actually scared to know what else he knows about me. Then theres this man who makes love to you like you read about it books and see in movies but 100 times better than you ever dreamed. To a man who I can tell cares about me even though how we met and what he did to me was something I could and never forgive him for. That is something that will always stand in my mind. And to a man who just saved me from getting raped (again) which being raped twice in one would probably send me over the edge and I would end up killing myself before he even had a chance to torture me for being unfaithful. I got to say I have myself in a big shit of a mess. I have been telling this man I am in love with him and love him for the past 24 hours. I can tell in his eyes he really does love me it is the same glow that my parents still have for each other and they have been married 25 years. I know that if I say no to him he is going to I am sure question the love I told him that i have for him which will cause him to get upset and god knows what he will do to me. If i say yes like he said I am going to be stuck with him until the day he dies. Which right now I am going to say is my only chance of getting away from him is if the bastard does die. I am going to have to suck it up and figure it out from there. Eventually I am going to have to kill him just to be myself again and get away from him. He was still standing there looking through my eyes trying to read me. I just smiled and said " I would love to marry you Master" he smiled back at me and just leaned in and kissed me very long deep and passionate. Yup.that's it I am going to have to kill this man to get away from him.  
.

.  
After saying yes to him he picked me up in his arms and kissing me. This was something I had to deal with until my plan gets full into effect. I knew that I am going to have to sweet talk and butter his ass to make him not suspect anything. "Master?" I asked "Yes" he said. "Do you have to go

back I would love to celebrate tonight with you" I said giving him a sad face. "Oh that face is going to get me into so much trouble" he said. "Is that a yes" I smiled at him. "I have to baby it is my job but how about you call me before you go to bed and I will talk to you then. And I will be home tomorrow night ok baby?" "Ok master" I said kissing him. "Ahhhh I don't want to leave" he growled. "Mmmm then don't master I will do naughty things to you" I whispered in his ear. He gripped my ass then smacked it. "Just go be a good girl and I will reward you tomorrow for it ok?" "Ok master sounds good to me" I smiled at him. He kissed me again and walked me to my car. He pushed me up against the door kissing me hard and rough. "When shall I call you next master?" I asked. "Mmm baby its almost 12 so how about 2" he said. "I can't wait" I smiled at him. He opened the car door for me and I climbed in. He leaned in and kissed me again. "Remember keep in contact with me baby" "yes master I won't forget" he closed the door and I started the car and drove off after he walked over and got into his car. I have come to the conclusion that I am going to have to marry him and just kill him. I don't know how long its going to take or when the right time will be but its going to happen. I got home and went into my room. I had think how this is going to happen. I needed to know when where he wanted to marry me. So I can take some action. I texted him asking when he wanted to get married. He replied saying how about this weekend. I replied saying that would be perfect master and I couldn't wait to be his wife. I then asked where we were going to leave and what not. He said he would get us a place and that I needed not to worry. I guess the more I plan will be after all of this marriage bull shit and go from there. Killing him will end things with us. Pay back for raping me and stealing my virginity and revenge for every thing he has done to me and anyone else he has hurt, beaten, raped or done anything wrong to. This is going to be the worst thing ever in my life but worth it in the fucking end

.  
. .

MY MASTER

.  
.

#9

.  
.

i checked in with him through out the day like he asked me to. It was approaching 10 pm and even though thats when he wanted me in bed I was actually tired. I got dressed in to my pajamas and climbed in bed and picked up the phone and called him."Hello my love"he said answering. "Hello Master" I sounded excited to talk to him. "I miss my master"I continued.. "Oh I miss my baby" he said. "You did very good with everything I asked today. I am very proud of you" "Thank you Master I love making you happy" "You have already made me the happiest Master any one could ever have" "Speaking of baby tomorrow night we are going somewhere. I have a get together with some buddies of mine and their slaves and I want to bring you and show you off" he said. "Ok master I would love to" I said. "I knew you wouldn't object I am going to send you to a friend of mine tomorrow she owns a dress shop and shes going to hook you up for me. She knows what I

like and what you need to wear" he said. "Ok master sounds like a fun night" "it will be sweetie I will be there to pick you up around 8 also pack a bag for the next few days we are going to spend it together" "ok Master I can do that" "I love I love I fucking love how fast you have caught on. Its the best feeling to find someone like you baby. And if everything goes right tomorrow night with my buddies I am going to have a surprise for you." "You know I wouldn't disobey my master" I said. "Thank you sweet heart. But its time for bed and call me at 730 to check in ok my love?" "Ok Master" I said. "Goodnight babe I love you" he said. "I love you Master I will be dreaming of you" I said. I could tell through the phone he was smiling and everything I was doing was working. "Bye love" "Bye Master". I was kinda nervous about what was going to happen tomorrow night and if I was good what the reward be more sex until I almost pass out from being drained. But I set my alarm for 7 so I could wake up make some coffee and then call him. My plan is slowly starting to work I just I guess have to give it time. I turned the lamp off by my bed pulled the covers over me and closed my eyes

.

.

I was drinking my morning coffee waiting to call him. Thinking maybe this situation right now isnt so bad until I my plan into action. I know what I have to do but I have to get him comfortable with me. I know he already is some what but I got to get him to trust me 100%. If he wasn't such a psycho path I honestly wouldn't think he was a bad guy. I mean he was pretty attractive he was a few inchs taller than me. He has a great body can tell me works out by his muscles and lower abs. And of course the strength he has. He has sexy green eyes that any woman could fall for. He has one of those high and tight marine hair cuts. Which makes me think he was in the service. He told me he was 34 years old. I don't know if thats true or not but he could pass as a guy in his early 30s. When he is in a good mood he does have a good personality. But there's still what he did to me I could never forgive him for. But I have to do what I have to do to get away from him. Its going to be hard but its my only option at the moment. It was a few minutes til 730 so I went a head and called him. "Good morning my love" he answered. "Good morning Master" I said. "How did you sleep?" he asked. "Ok. Not the same with out you Master" I said. "Ahh your too much baby" he said. "Are you ready for tonight?" He asked. " I am master but I do got a question though?" I asked. "Of course sweetie ask away" he said "Are other Masters going to have sex with me tonight?" I asked. "No sweetie you are mine and when I take you there your just there to be with me. Yes others share their slaves just to have a good fuck from someone else, but I am not going to share you with noone." He said. "Ok master" I said. "Why you ask?" He asked "I was just curious master I didn't want to have sex with anyone else only you" I said. Which was true I prefer not to sleep with anyone else and he does seem like the jealous I dont share type. "Dont worry baby your mine and mine alone. I am not going to lie they might stare at you and try to touch you but I wont let noone touch you ok?" He said. "Ok master I trust you" I said. "I am glad you do sweetie. But babe I need you to fo out today and get ready for tomorrow. There's a shop down town called Angelas. Go in there and ask for Angie shes a good friend of mine we and shes going to help you get ready just tell her I sent you ok?" "Ok Master" I said. "Ok baby she is expecting you around 9 so hurry and get dressed and get down there I got a couple things to do and I will be

heading that way" he said " I got one more question Master if thats ok?" I asked. "Sure hun" he said. "Are you going to pick me up at my house or some where else?" I asked. "At your house baby I should be there around 6" "Ok Master" I said. "Don't forget to keep checking in and call me alright?" He said "Ok master I will call you about 930 if thats ok?" I said. "That is great baby talk to you soon I love you" "I love you Master" I said as he hung up. I went and took a quick shower and got in my car. I heard my phone go off and it was a text from hom. It said "I miss your voice already" I just rolled my eyes and quickly wrote back "I miss all of you" as I started my car and headed down town to the place

.  
. .  
. .  
. .  
. .

MY MASTER

.  
.

#10

.  
.

I arrived at this shop it was nice from the outside there were lots of gorgeous dresses I could see through the Windows. I shot him a quick text saying I was here and I would be calling him in a little bit. He replied saying thank you checking in and got make yourself hot for your master. I got out of my car and went in. A tall skinny lady walked up to me asking if she could help me. I told her I was looking for Angie. She smiled and told me that she was Angie. I told that Andrew had sent me. She just light up and said "Oh great! I already have several things picked out" she said pulling my arm and walking me to the back dressing room. She opened the door and I saw several pretty dresses hanging up. "Andrew told me you were about a size 6 is that right?" She asked. "Yes and no depends what I am wearing sometimes I need a size 8" I said. "Its alright if it doesn't fit we can find your size" she smiled. "All of these look so gorgeous" I said looking at all of them feeling them. "I think Andrew will like any of these" she said "well thats good I am not sure what he likes so I am glad one of us does" I said. She just laughed and said "well I better know what he likes I am his sister" "what you are his sister" I said. "Yes he didn't tell you. Well I am his much older sister" she laughed. "Andrew is the baby of the family" "oh ok" I said I didn't want to ask to many questions or know a hole lot just in case this was another test or he listening in and I regret it later on. I changed the subject and said "I do like this black one" pulling it down. "Well try it on sweetie" she said taking it from me. It was a long dress that would come right above my knees. It had spaghetti straps so it wouldn't make my girls hang out or anything. I slide down my jeans and took off my top. As she handed me the dress. "Your going to have to take your bra off to get the real effect" she said. I took my bra off as she helped me put it on and zipped it up the back for me. "What do you think?" She asked. "Well I do like it but it's not what I think its what hes going to think" I said. She just giggled and said "that is true he is one picky man but I really think he will like it" "then I



want this one" I said smiling at her. "Great. I think you look very pretty in it" she said. "Thank you" I said. She unzipped it for me as I slide out of it handing it back to her. I got dressed and asked her if I could use the restroom. "Of course its down the hall last door on the left" I went in and shut the door and locked it. I went ahead and called Andrew because it was close to 930. "Hey my love" he answered "Hi master" I said. "What is wrong sweetie I am going to beat her ass if she did anything to you" he got a little defensive. "Oh nothing master I am fine. Everything is going fine here i picked out a dress. I think well I hope you will like it" I said."Anything you wear I am going to love" he said. "By the way I am guessing she told you that she is my sister" "Yes she did master thats all she told me oh and that she's your much older sister" he just busted out laughing "yes she is shes the only one in my family that I talk to babe but thats another story for another time baby" he s said. "Ok Master" I said. "Is there anything else you want me to do today master?" I asked. "For now just go back home baby" he said. "But I want you to call me when you get there" "ok Master I can definitely do that" "ok sweetie now get your sexy ass home. I love you" "I love you Master" I said as we hung up. I walked down the hallway and was hearing Angie talking to another lady she said "This is the first girl my brother has sent here hes apparently taking her out for something special tonight. He told me that there was something special about her and he was already falling for her. Which to me I guess is great maybe he is moving on since he has been back in the civilian world but she is kind of young I mean he might want something serious later on but she might not want that you know and I don't want to see him have his heart broken again like that bitch Tracy did a few years back" she said "Who is Tracy?" The other girl asked. "That was Andrew fiancée when he was in the marines they dated for a long time and decided to get married and everything had it all planned out and he was home on leave and it was the night before the wedding and he found out she had been fucking his best friend the whole time he was gone" she said. "Damn thats fucked up" the other lady said. "Yea I know he went back to Iraq and became a different person. Until last night he called me and he was happy and started telling me why and he had met this girl who had changed him.

And he really did seem happy. Don't get me wrong she is a very nice pretty girl but if he wants something serious I don't know shes probably not even 20 years old herself." You never know Angie she might be the one for him" she said. I didn't want to stand there and ease drop so I walked around the corner saying "Thank you for everything Angie and your help" "You are welcome I hope you guys have a wonderful time tonight" she said "Yes me too well I am sure we will" I said. "Where are you going?" The other lady asked "I honestly have no idea he said it was a surprise so we shall see" I said smiling. "I am sure you guys will have a good time" Angie said handing me the dress she had wrapped it up for me. "Thank you. And thank you again" I said as I took it and walked out. "Your welcome any time" she said as I was leaving I heard the other lady tell Angie "you are right she is really pretty" and Angie replied "Yes she is definitely my brothers type" I got into my car and didn't know what to think I do feel bad for the guy that his ex did that to him especially someone you trust and found out shes fucking your best friend. I sent him a quick text before I started driving. "I miss you Master" which I think honestly I do miss him a little bit. Just the part of how he is when hes nice and in a good mood. Not the whole crazy psycho whip leather

masked guy. He responded by saying "I miss you and love you more" which I didn't argue I know this man does love me and miss me more than I do him

got home hanging the dress up in my closet and laid down on my bed and called him. "Did you make it home my love?" He asked. "Yes Master I did" I said. "Good" he said. "Master I got a question for you" I said "Yes baby" he said " I am going to be marrying you this weekend and well I don't even know your last name" I said. He chuckled and said "my apologies baby its Jules so your new last name will be Jules" "I love it" I said. "I glad you do" he said. "I want to try something baby" he said. "Ok Master" I said. "I want you to take off all your clothes for me" "ok Master hang on" I put the phone down and took off all my clothes and said "ok I am completely naked master" I said "Prove it baby" he said "ok Master hold on" I said clicking over and taking a few pictures of my self. My face, chest, stomach, spread my legs open and a picture of my pussy. I sent them all to them. "Ok Master you should be getting something naughty pretty soon" I said he just laughed and said "alright my love lets see if I prove of them hold on" I could hear him clicking through his phone and looking at them. "Tsk tsk tsk baby" he said. "Yes Master don't you like them?" I asked "I am getting hard just looking at them" he said. "Mmmmm master" I said. "Why don't you play with yourself baby and think of me" he said "and what would you be doing master?" I asked "I am going to continue stroking my cock baby" he said quietly "oh master" I said as I reached down and started rubbing the top of my pussy feeling my self already starting to get wet. "Tell me what you want me to do baby?" He said. " I want my master to kiss me. Starting at my neck going down towards my boobs getting my nipples are by sucking on them caressing them with your tongue feeling my nipples grow in your mouth running your hands down my legs over to my inner thighs while starting to kiss my stomach making circles with your tongue as I start to moan ohhhhh master" I said "oh yes baby tell me what else" he whispered " I want you to take your fingers and run them around my pussy lips feeling how wet I am and oh god how I am soaken wet for you baby." I could hear him start to breath heavier and start to moan as I was saying this. "And what else?" He said " I want you to slide two fingers inside of me like I am doing to myself right now ohh master it feels so good. Sliding your fingers in and out of me faster and faster making me wetter as I start arching my back wanting more than just your fingers inside of me" "You want my big cock inside of you don't you baby?" He said. "Oh yes baby I do I want you to get in between my legs and come up to my face kissing me softly while grinding your cock on the outside of my pussy teasing me...oh I want it master I want you inside of me" I moaned louder. "Tell me baby" he moaned and breathed deeper as I knew he was stroking his cock faster and harder imagining his cock inside my pussy. "You push the head of your cock inside of me making me moan and gripping your back hard scratching it as you pushed all of it inside of me..going back and forth slow at first but deeper. While I am moaning louder and wrapping my legs around your waist pulling you into me. You start speeding up going faster and deeper with each thrust hitting my g spot making me wanting to cum all over your dick" "Mmm baby yes cum for me cum on my cock baby girl" he moaned "I can feel it coming baby and you start arching your back moaning for me as my legs start to shake as I yell I am cumming baby oh my god I am cumming....ahhhh ahhhh ahhhh oh

master I am cumming" I felt my legs shake as I was rubbing my clit with my thumb and fingering myself at the same time and cumming all over my fingers. I could hear him start to grunt and moan as he started moaning "I am cumming baby where do you want it?" I knew that he liked cumming deep inside of me so I just it "oh master cum deep inside my hot wet pussy it wants your cum baby" I moaned as I heard him start to moan loud which recognizing that moan he just came. "Oh baby that was fucking hot" he said trying to catch his breath. "Yes it was master I loved it" which I am not going to lie it was pretty hot and I did enjoy it. "I can't believe you agreed to have phone sex baby" he s said "why wouldn't I master?" I said "thats what I like to hear baby. Well I am going to clean up my little mess i just made and take a shower and get ready you should too my love" he said "ok Master I will. But wait master how do you want me to do my hair makeup or do you not like that?" I said. "Hmmm curl your hair baby and very little make up I don't want you to look like a whore or anything" he laughed. "But I am your whore" I said. He just laughed and said "that you are sweetie. Text me in a little bit ok my love?" "Ok Master I will" I said. "Good girl I love you. Talk to you soon" he said "I love you Master" "bye beautiful" he said "bye master" I said as I hung up

just laid there for a little bit recovering from my orgasm that was officially I first time I have ever had phone sex and I got to say it wasn't that bad. Ok well it was fucking hot but I am still going to have to go through with my plan I mean I can't turn back now just because he is being nice to me. I think. I have been starting to get feelings for him I admit it. It is nice having someone telling you they love you that they think your gorgeous but I still can't and probably will never get over what he did to me the first night we were together and the markings he left on my body. Yes they are starting to heal some but the scars will always be there how can I be with someone who did that to me that makes me want to burst out crying just thinking about it. I laid there for a good hour until I noticed I should probably take a shower and get ready. I wrote him a quick text saying I can't wait to see you Master. I got in the shower and just stood there letting the hot water just heal my chest and my mind. Let's see how tonight goes if I am going to be this mans slave for rest of my life I am going to be having to do these kinds of partys alot I am sure. I turned the water off and got out of the shower it was close to 4pm and I started to slowly get ready. He had texted me back saying he was on his way and will be there in about an hour hour and 30 minutes. I blow dried my hair and brushed it out. I curled it a little bit like he asked. Put a little bit of make up on eye liner and mascara just to make my eyes stand out. I put on a red par of boy shorts. And slipped into my dress I got to say zipping it up your self isnt that easy and I could only get it up half way. I am going to have to get him to finish it. I sprayed a little perfume on me I looked down at the floor and picked up my heels I had and slide them on I looked up at the mirror to check myself out one more time until I noticed in the mirror he was standing behind in the mirror. I just smiled at as he was smiling at me. "You you look amazing my love so beautiful" he said coming up behind me and wrapping his arms around my waist. "You look pretty handsome master" I said "thank you baby" he said kissing the side of my neck. "Can you do me a favor master?" I asked. "Yes baby" he said "Can you zip me up I couldn't do it" I giggled. I felt his hands run up my back to my zipper as he zipped it up slowly. I watched his face in the mirror he was actually enjoying it or enjoying the view. He ran his hands up the rest of my body as he kissed the back of my neck slowly and softly.

"Mmmm I got to stop baby I can't start something I can't finish" he said I turned around and stared into his eyes they were eyes you could tell had been hurt maybe thats why he was wanting to be dominant at first. He didn't want noone to hurt him again but his eyes were bold and strong and starting to give a little this man was really in love with me and I could tell by the look in his eyes. "May I master?" I asked. He just knodded his head yes as I leaned up wrapping my arms around his neck and kissed him. Sliding my tongue in to his mouth very slowly and passionately. He put his hands in my waist and pulled me into him. Kissing me back sliding his tongue in to my mouth. We stood there and kissed for what seemed like hours but only a few minutes in reality. I pulled away and hugged him. I whispered in his ear "I love you" as I fell into his neck. "I love you sweet girl" he said hugging me tighter. I think deep down I do love this man and I don't know how I can. He pulled away and picked up my hand "lets go" he said. I just nodded and followed him out to his car. I got in as he got into his side and we drove there. We didn't say anything to each other but every once in a while I would catch him trying to stare at me. I just smiled at him and he would smile back. We reached this house that looked like a mansion I was getting kind of nervous I really didn't know what to expect. I saw a few older guys walking inside with these younger girls I am guessing those were their slaves. Some of them were all over each other and some where being treated like shit. He parked the car as we both got out. I walked over to him and he picked up my hand and kissed it. "Its going to be ok baby you trust me?" He asked. "Yes Master I do" I said. "Ok let's go" he said. We started walking as I looking at all of these other Masters and slaves. Until I looked up and just stopped clinching his hand in mine. "What's wrong baby?" He said getting in front of me looking into my eyes. "What tell me" he said. "That man master" I said pointing "yes baby what about him?" He asked "That is my father" I said

.

.

.

MY MASTER

.

#11

.

.

.

I guess it all makes sense now that why my father was so much more older than my mother he was 19 years older than her. She was more than likely his slave at one point in time until I am sure got pregnant with me. It would also explain why he hated the fact that I was a girl. He would straight up tell me he wanted a son but I was here instead. He was a terrible man and he was the man reason I ran away. "He hurt you didn't he?" Andrew asked. "Yes" I just nodded "Yes Master I mean I am so sorry" I said correcting myself "Its ok baby" he said hugging me "Tell me what he did to you" he said "Do I have to master?" I asked "Yes I need to know" he said. "Ok master" I said. I just sighed and told him. How my whole life my father hated me hated everything about me. Would tell me all the time how he wanted a son that a daughter to him was pointless and that my mother did that on purpose. Like she decided rather she would have a boy or a girl. I got beaten all the

time. For saying the wrong thing. Not making straight A's. Having friends over. I wasn't allowed to go anywhere or do anything. And my mother let him and now I understand why she was his slave. I told him how my mother was 19 years younger than my father and I am sure I was an accident child. But what can you do. It explains why he left alot and when he would come back and beat the shit out of me for no reason. I ended up telling him that the reason I ran away was that one night I heard him talking in his office to another guy and telling this guy that on my 18th birthday he was going to sell me off to him. That he was planning an arranged marriage and I had no choice in the matter. When he caught me listening he dragged me into his office and beat the shit out of me worse than he ever had. He told me that I had to stay in here and let this other man get to know his future wife. But once he started touching me I couldn't do it. I kicked punched my way away from him and ran to my room grabbing my things running to my car and left. That's how I ended up living with my friend Jesse I told him. I started to cry reliving the things my father had done to me. Andrew whipped the tears from my face and kissed my cheeks.. "Don't cry baby I am hear now" he said. "I am going to have to face him arent I master?" I asked. "Yes but fuck that baby you don't have to call me master tonight ok?" He said "Are you sure?" I asked "Yes my love you call me any thing but that" he said leaning in and kissing. I just let him kiss me and I just wrapped my arms around him he hugged me really tight kissing my neck. "I love you" I said "I love you baby now let's go inside and you know before the night is over I will probably confronting your father" he said.I just smiled at him. "And you know baby a true master wants a son I am not sticking up for the man but that's why he did them. They want sons. A daughter would mess up their life. And I am sure once you were born he disowned your mother as his slave technically and got himself a new one" he said "Yes it all makes sense now I just never understood why he hated me" I said. "Well you got me now and I love you more than anything baby I could never hate you" he said "what if we have a baby?" I asked. "I wouldn't give two shits if it was a boy or a girl" he smiled at me and kissed me again. "I love you Andrew" I said. "I love you baby girl" he said. I think that was the first time I told him I loved him and I actually meant it

.  
. .  
. .  
. .

MY MASTER

.

#12

.  
.

Luckily my so called father didn't see me. He probably didn't recognize me.I never wore dresses like this around him and I was never allowed to buy them. I wasn't even allowed to go to my high school prom. So this is technically the first nice dress I have ever worn let alone owed. We walked in a Andrew was greeted by other guys that he knew. He would introduce me as his woman not as his slave. They all would smile over at me as Andrew held my hand tight and every once in a while pull me into him wrapping his arm around my waist.I didn't see my father and by listening to some

of the other conversations a lot of the other Masters would immediately switch slaves with each other and go off into other rooms and fuck them. Andrew got asked if he was going to share me by this very older bold headed man who was old enough to be my grandpa just the image thought of an old guy dick and saggy balls made me feel disgusted. Andrew politely said no she is not for sharing she is too special. I just smiled at him. As a familiar voice from behind us said "But come on you have shared before" with a evil giggle. I gripped Andrews hand as he looked at me and winked as we both turned around. My father just starred at me and his mouth kind of opened and eyes bugged out of his head.. "Well I see you picked a whore like mother like daughter" he said to Andrew. "Watch what you fucking say" Andrew said snapping back at him. "What her mother is a god damn slave whore I passed her around so much especially while she was pregnant with your pathetic ass" he said to me. "I told you to fucking watch what you say" Andrew said stepping in front of me. "Your actually protecting that piece of worth less shit. She did nothing for me she was a worthless daughter which I am sorry you were ever born. All you did was make my life a living hell" he said. "Well maybe if you weren't such a fucking low life dick head that liked to beat his daughter I would of been a better daughter for you. I am actually ashamed you are my father" I said. "Excuse me Mr Jules are you going to let your fucking slave talk to a master that way" he snapped at Andrew. "Your damn fucking right I am and she is not my slave. She is my woman." He snapped back. "You have done the stupidest thing Mr Jules fallen in love with a slave." He said. "So fucking what if I have you were in love with yours too until she had a daughter. You always compare your slave to the others you bring in here how she was the best piece of ass you have ever had and you were so fucking happy when she got pregnant but when the doctor brought you your daughter you told the doctor to take her back. I can guarantee you you still love her. And who gives a shit if she gave you a daughter be fucking happy she gave you a child. You should be proud and love that child no matter what fucked up things they do. She is your own fleshing blood be fucking proud of that" Andrew was yelling so loud that everyone was listening to him. "Yes I love your daughter and I want to marry her. And I could give to shits what you think about that" he finally stopped yelling waiting to see if my father would say anything back. "Well good luck with her if she's anything like her mother she will be popping out daughters for you" he said walking away. "And" Andrew yelled. He turned around and looked at me all I could do was say "Thank you" he leaned in a kissed me "Your are welcome sweetheart" he whispered. "Hes a good man" another guy came up to me. "He might be a jealous possessive asshole but ive never seen him smile with a slave like he had with you" he said "oops I don't know if you refer to master and slave" I just looked up at Andrew and said "Yes thats my sexy master for yah" he just laughed. I knew then that he trusted me more maybe not a 100% yet but I am getting close. And yes I do love him I would admit it. He told off the man who I have been wanting to for the past 18 years. That I love him for. I love him for the way he has been treating me. I have never had anyone do that before. But how can you still not get over what he did to me in the beginning maybe that is something I need to talk to him about later. Thats if he will let me. Just because he didnt let me call him master tonight doesn't mean he doesn't want me to start back up tomorrow. He still has that side of him that I am scared of that I fear will show up again. He might have been nice and loving since after that night but maybe that night he didn't know he was going to fall in love with me he just wanted

to show his dominant side and whip me or something. I have read that that sort of thing turns some people on maybe he is that guy. But what if he is wouldn't he want to do that to me again

.  
.  
.  
#13  
.  
.

He might have been nice and loving since after that night but maybe that night he didn't know he was going to fall in love with me he just wanted to show his dominant side and whip me or something. I have read that that sort of thing turns some people on maybe he is that guy. But what if he is wouldn't he want to do that to me again. That's the part that actually scares me to the point of falling head over heels for this man hes going to do that again and he has already warned me that he will and it can be much worse. We ended up only staying a little bit longer. We walked hand in hand back to his car. He opened the car door for me and let me get in and closed the door. He got in and closed the door and leaned over and kissed me. "I wasn't that bad was I?" He asked "Egh I would been meaner" I laughed. He just laughed and kissed me again. "I love you sweet heart I really do and I hope that you know that" he said. "I love you" I said starring into his eyes. "Let's get the fuck out of here" he said starting up the car "remember I do have a surprise for you" he said. "Oh that's right. I am guessing I was a good girl today" I said. "Yes baby you were" he said as we drove away. We drove about 20 minutes to a hotel. A different one the first one he was staying at. We walked in and up to the room. "You have to stay outside for a minute" he said opening the door "Ok" I said. He walked in a shut the door I leaned up against the wall and waited. I was thinking what could he have in mind was it something like a dominance thing were I am going to walk in seeing whips and chains and hes going to tie me to the bed or something and beat me then fuck me. I am not going to lie that thought was in my mind just because he has done it before. But I am praying that that wasn't it. I heard the door open as he opened it wearing only his boxers. "Come here baby" he said as I walked over to him he put his hands up along my face and kissed me. Really softly like one of those kisses you just melt into. "You have to close your eyes ok?" "Ok " I said nodding as I closed my eyes and he picked up my hand and we started walking inside the room. It smelt like roses in there and it was a little cold. I heard him close the door. And walk me further into the room. He turned me around and I guess I was facing him because I felt his hands on my waist pulling me into him kissing me again. This time sliding his tongue in to my mouth slowly running it all around inside. He pulled away and leaned into my ear "You can open your eyes now baby" he said. For a second there I was scared to what I would be seeing. But I opened them. He was standing in front of me. With this look in his face that he was happy to be with me and that I was the only person in the room. Technically I was put its just the face of love. He stepped out of the way he had deemed the lights down. There was candles every where that had been lighten and making the room glow. He had put rose pedals all along the floor and over the bed. I was in complete shock to be honest. "Do you like it?" He asked. I looked straight into his eyes. "Yes I do baby" I could tell I was starting to get teary eyed thinking he would

do something like this. Let alone for me. He walked up behind me and unzipped my dress pulling the straps down and letting it fall to the ground. He wrapped his hands around to my stomach and I put my hands on top of his. I kicked off my heels and just enjoyed the little kisses he was giving me on the back of my neck and my shoulders. He slowly turned me around and kissed me very slowly and passionately. Guiding me backwards to the edge of the bed. "Do you want me to make love to you baby?" He asked. "Yes baby" I said kissing him pulling himself into me as he was kissing me back guiding me down to the bed as I was crawl backwards to the top of the bed while he was crawling with me still kissing me. I laid down on my back as he started kissing my neck and going slowly down my chest to my breasts. I moaned a little when he reached my nipples sucking on them a little bit but a little hard at the same time. He looked up and smiled at me as he started heading down towards my pussy. "No baby" I said. "Why not baby?" He asked. "I want to please you" I said smiling. "Oh why dont we please each other" he smiled. I just smiled and nodded and he got next to me and rolled over on his back. I got on top of him and kissed him. Feeling his hard cock throbbing under neath me. I slide done and pulled down his boxers exposing his cock. I got off the bed and slide down my boy shorts kicking them across the floor. I climbed back on top of him and then turned around sitting on his chest. He started moving his hands up and down my back as I laid down on top of him. Putting my pussy in his face and his cock was in mine. He didn't waste any time licking my pussy.

So I took his cock in my hand and started stroking it a little at first. I leaned down and slide the head of it in my mouth as he moaned. I could feel his hot breath in my pussy still as he was sucking on my clit. I started sliding his cock all the way into my mouth. It barely fit but I relaxed my jaw and started deep throating it. Sucking it faster and harder. just sucking hard on the head of it harder and hearing him moan louder as he was enjoying it. I think he was actually enjoying it too much that he lost thought that he was licking my pussy because he stop and moan and start thrusting his dick deep in my mouth the start licking my pussy again. "Mmmm baby I can't stand it any more" he said rolling me off of him and on to my back as he got on top of me and got in between my legs. He started kissing me again softly letting our tongues explore each others as I started to feel his cock creep up my pussy lips feeling the pressure of it pushing against me making me wanting it. He leaned back and looked down at me and thrust back pushing his cock deep inside of me. I arched my back and moaned loudly as it was going in inch by inch and he had a pretty good size dick and I felt it all go in very slowly hitting my g spot teasing it. He leaned back down started kissing my neck as he started pumping faster. Moaning in my ear. "Oh baby you are so amazing" he said. "God you are so good baby I love you inside of me" I moaned louder. He started going faster and deeper feeling his cock hitting the back of my vagina sliding out and rehitting it again. I was starting to moan louder which was making him go faster. And I was loving it. I could tell my orgasm was about to cum and it was going to be big. "Ahhhh ahhh I am cumming baby" I yelled he started pumping more and leaning back as I could feel my eyes roll in the back of my head. "Ahhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhh" I screamed as I opened my eyes leaning up to him as he was just sliding his cock out and I saw myself squirt across the sheet. I fell back down as he leaned in a smiled kissing me "Now its my turn baby. I am close" he started pumping again going deep and



hard. I wrapped my legs around his waist and pulled him into me. Our foreheads were touching as we were looking into each others eyes as he started moaning and moaning louder. I gripped his back as he leaned down and kissed me and moaned loudly cumming deep inside of me. He kissed me again as he was thrusting a few more times I guess making sure all of his cum was out. He rolled over and pulled me next to him. Locking his fingers inside mine as we started kissing again. "I love you baby" he said "I love you" I said "Do you still want to be mine forever?" He asked. "Yes you better believe it baby" I said as we kissed again. "Still this weekend?" I asked "Yes ma'am actually tomorrow" he smiled I just smiled back at him as I kissed him rolling over on top of him wanting him again

.  
.  
.  
MY MASTER

.  
#14  
.  
.

I woke up the next morning with him laying next to me still asleep. I just watching him breath in and out. He looked very peaceful. Until he mumbled "Good morning" I just looked at him I didn't know rather to call him master or not but I answered by just leaning in and kissing him. He kissed me back moaning a little bit. I just smiled at him. "How did you sleep?" He asked. "Really good master?" I just kinda questioned it because I really didn't know. He just smiled at me and said "Thats good" he said. I guess we are going back to being called master today. "I love the way you kiss you know that baby" he said. "Yes Master I do and I love when you kiss me" I said. "Well I love kissing you" he said again leaning in and kissing me again. " I guess we better get up we got something to do today" he said. I just smiled at him as he sat up and turned around putting his feet on the floor. I sat up next to him we were both still naked. I am pretty sure we had a good 4 rounds last night and I couldn't tell you how many orgasms I had but they were all still wonderful. "So I like to keep things traditionally baby so I don't want to see you until we get married this afternoon" he said "Ok Master" I said. "I had someone bring over your car so its downstairs and I am going to go to another room to get ready and I will meet you at the courthouse at 430" he said standing up. "Your clothes to wear are in the closet and I would leave here about 330 because of traffic" he said "ok Master I can do that" I watched him quickly get dressed and walk back over to me. "I will see you this afternoon baby" he smiled at me "Yes Master" I said "Good I can't wait I love you" he sai said kissing me not giving me a chance to write back. "I love you" I said. "I love you what?" He said. "I love you Master" I said. "Good girl see you later" he said walking out the door. I honestly thought last night might have changed him a little bit. But I guess it didn't. But I guess its going back to doing anything and everything he tells me to do. I was actually convinced he would have changed maybe not all the way but at least some. I walked over to the door to lock it so no one comes in while i take a shower. I heard someone talking so I peeped through the eye sight hole. It was him. And he wasn't talking he was leaning up next to the door he was crying. "God I am such

an asshole" he said. I saw him take out his phone from his pocket and call someone. "Hey sis its me" he said. "Yes I am fucking crying why do you think I called you...why am I crying because I am a fuck up." I tried to push my head and ear up against the door and hear some more. "Last night was wonderful I couldn't ask for a better night..yes I took your advice and did the candles she loved it. But this morning I am idiot" he continued. "Yes I know I can't treat women that way you knew what kind of person I was before I met her and I feel like shit every time I have to be an asshole to her. I do love her Angie...well I did something else the second night we were together I am sure you saw them those marks on her....yes Angie I fucking did that to her and I cried like a little bitch the next day....yes I do believe her that she loves me..she's not going to understand she's going to leave me....ok ok I will go back and talk to her and not be an asshole...alright I will call you later." I quietly unlocked the door because I know he has a key and quickly got back into bed. I heard the door open and looked up acting surprised he was coming back. "Master you came back" I said. "Baby please don't" he said walking up to the bed and crawling up to me. "What master whats wrong?" I asked. He took my hands into his and looked dead at me in the face. " I am sorry. I am sorry for being a dick head to you this morning. We just had an incredible night together and I went back to being an asshole" he said. "You are my master you have that right" I said. "No baby" he said putting his hand up against my face. "I love you and I think I proved it more last night than ever and you proved it to me too that you love me. I think you should not call me master any more" he said. I didn't know what to say. "But We will still have some ground rules and if that doesn't work we will have to go back to the master alright?" "Ok" I said. "Ok its pretty much the same rules you have to check in with me like before. Now that we are going to be married you are going to have to go to events and parties with me like we did last night. You will not work you will be my stay at home wife for now we can discuss the kids part later. You will have dinner ready for me and that's well pretty much it" he said "Ok" I said "No objections?" He asked "No" I said "No what?" He asked "No my love" I said "That's my girl I knew you were the one baby I just knew it" he said.

.

"But there is one thing" he said "Whats that?" I asked "There are certain events where I have to call you my slave and you have to call me master" he said "That's fine" I said "Good baby girl God I do love you " he said kissing me. "Baby?" I asked "Yes my love" "Have you been crying?" I asked. "You could tell huh?" I just shook my head yes. "Don't cry I understand that you had to at first show me you the boss and master" I said " I know and after I knew you were the one I felt like shit for it. Trust me I don't like being called master I like being called things like baby sweetie things like that" he said "Thank you for understanding my love" he said kissing me again "Your welcome baby" I said. "Ok now I am really going to go I have a wedding to get to" he laughed "Why yes I do too" I smiled as he leaned in and kissed me. "I love you baby girl" he said "I love you my love" I said as he walked out the door

.

.

.

.

## MY MASTER

.  
#15  
.

I had a feeling there was more to what he was trying to tell me but he did didn't. But I guess its one step closer to him trusting me all the way. I have come to the conclusion that I do love this man someone can say all they want you can't fall in love with someone that fast well bullshit they are wrong. But yes I do love him if things work out great for us then awesome. That means he really was the one for me and yes he was that kind of person before I met him and maybe not at first he didn't know that he loved me and was just doing his thing like he had in the past and when his feelings started to grow which I could tell did the first time we made love to each other he did start to change and treat me different. But there is that part of me that I know I can't run from him he will always own me and that I am stuck with him rather or not I love him or not. But as of right now yes I love the man. But that thought is always going to be in the back of my mind of my mind and I am starting to believe now that he knows that and maybe down in his heart he is sorry for it. But if it happens again I will put my plan into deep effect I got the shit beat out of me all the time growing up and I will be damned if my husband will do the same thing to me. I took a shower an actually pretty long shower to that I actually lost track of time. It was 2 o'clock when I got out of the shower. I heard my phone ring and I went to go get it. It was a text from him. It said " Thank you for understanding I love you so much baby girl" I just smiled and replied back " I love you baby I can't wait to have you forever" I went over to the closet and opened it. There was another dress in there it was simple long and white. I recognized it's another one from his sister store. There was a note pinned to it. It said " I can't wait to see you in this". I took it and laid it on the bed and went and blow dried my hair. Brushing it out and curling it like he likes it. I did my make up the same way. And walked back to my phone I guess I better call him since I still do have to check in with him. He picked it up after the first ring "Hello my love I was wondering if you were going to call me." "Of course baby I still have to check in with you" "I know sweetie are you almost done getting ready?" He asked. "Yes just have to get dressed" I said "Good baby same here" he said "I guess we better finish we got to leave in about 15 minutes" he said "Yes we do baby" I said "Ok my love I will see you soon. I can't wait to marry you" he said "I can't wait either baby" I said "I love you baby girl" he said " I love you baby" I said as we both hung up. I picked up the dress and slide it on. This time there was no zipper so I didn't need his help. I looked at myself in the mirror and honestly couldn't believe I was about to get married. But I have to do what I have to do. I do love him I just pray he doesn't turn psycho on me

.  
when I arrived at the court house I just sat in my car for a minute. I knew that I loved this man but I also know what kind of person he can be. I know we are rushing into this so fast but I know he loves me and if we were meant to be we would get married eventually right? I know if I don't go in there he would flip out and come after me. He would do things to me he threatened or had already

done to me. There's always going to be that part of who will remember every bad thing he did to me. Especially raping me like that the first night. Then beating the shit out of me the next. I think deep down he might be sorry but if he is he needs to say it to me and not just be nicer to everyday. I looked up and saw his sister standing in front of my car. "Hey" I said getting out. "Hi sister in law?" She laughed hugging me. "That would make me your sister yeah" I said. "Andrew called and told me you guys were getting married and honestly couldn't believe it" she said "Yes we are I know short timing" I said "he is a good guy he really is and he told me what he has done to you before he fell in love you" she said "Yeah I said looking down at my chest" seeing the markings some of them were still there. "Let him open to you I hope it will make you understand why he did it" she said. "Ok" i said. "He really does love you and I can tell you do love him" she said. "I do love him" I said. She just smiled at me wrapping her around my shoulders "Then lets go get your husband" she said smiling. We both walked in to the court house and down to the justice of peace office. He was standing out there so we went into the actual court house. He was standing up there with the judge and smiled really big when I walked in. "Here" she said handing me a ring "That it for him that was his dads before he died" I just smiled at her and took it. I walked down to the front by him. He was just smiling at me the entire time. Which I know I was smiling at him too. He was wearing a black suit very expensive with a blue silk tie. And these expensive leather boots. I do got to say he was looking drop dead sexy. I stood up next to him as he just looked into my eyes and picked up my hands. The judge started talking and I was too busy lost in his eyes and smile to hear what he was saying. I remember saying I do. And putting the ring on his finger. Then when it was his turn he said the same and picked up my finger and holy shit put this gigantic size diamond ring on my finger. He whispered to me "You deserve it baby" I just smiled at him and remember the judge saying "now the power vested in me I know pronounce you husband and wife Andrew you may kiss your bride" he stepped closely into me taking his hands and running them up my jaw line just starring into my eyes. He leaned in and kissed me really softly sliding his tongue in a little bit then pulling it out and kissing my lips another time. "I love you baby thank you for making me the happiest man alive" he said. "I love you Andrew" I said smiling at him and leaning in and kissing him again. We turned and looked and could see his sister smiling and clapping at us. She came up and hugged us both. Maybe he wasn't such a bad person I got to thinking but I knew I still needed to talk to him about what he did to me. I guess maybe its a good thing my husband took my virginity but I do think I need an apology from him. We walked outside hand and hand to his car. He opened the door for me. "What about my car baby?" I asked. "Dont worry it will get taken care of" he said as I got in. He came around to the other side getting in and leaning over and kissing me. "I just want to kiss you all day every day" he said. "Then do it baby" I said at him as he just smiled and kissed me again.

.  
. .  
. .

MY MASTER

.  
.

.Being married to him was a great feeling I have to admit that. But I still knew little about him. I only knew his age his name simple things like that. His past I learned from his sister while I was ease dropping. I mean I don't even know what my husband does for a living. It must be pretty good and make good money. That he can afford staying at expensive hotels, buying those dresses for me, I saw the price tags they weren't cheap. He has that I know of two cars. One is a lexus and ones a corvette. And those are nice luxury experience cars. Plus to the point he told me I didn't have to work. But I don't know if thats part of the control factor that he wants me at home so he knows where I am at all the time. But maybe I got to thinking he wants to be controlling like that because of his ex. It sounded like she ran all over him and then fucked with his heart and cheated on him. Or the control and dominant thing is from being in the Marines. If he joined when he was young and got out recently then he had some pretty high ranking. Its something eventually I am going to have to talk to him about or hopefully like his sister says let him open up to me. I think once he does open up to me he will fully trust me. I do know he loves me and i can really tell that he does. And i am falling in love with him more and more each day. I just really hope he doesn't hurt me like he has done in the past. That fear will always be deep down inside of me that my guard isn't fully all the way down yet. We started driving and he was holding my hand as he was driving and I was wondering where we were going. We drove for a good hour we didn't really talk much I would just catch him smiling at me and I would smile back and he would take my hand up to his lips and kiss it and tell me loves me. "Are you ready to be home baby?" He asked "Yes baby" I said. We pulled down this street that lead into a small subdivision of houses. Really nice brick homes that you could tell was built recently. We turned down another street and I was just in ahh it was very pretty. He turned into a driveway to a small brick house. It was a single story house probably 3 bedrooms but really nice. "Welcome home baby" he said "Is this your house?" I asked. "No this is what I was out doing the other day I bought and a friend of mine helped me decorate buy furniture and stuff I hope you like because its ours baby" he said smiling at me. He lifted up his sunglasses and undid his seat belt and leaned over and kissed me. "Lets go inside baby" he said. I opened the car door and walked up to the door with him. He unlocked it and pushed it open. He looked over at me and said" You know its only right that I carry you across since you are my wife now" I just smiled at him as he picked me up into his arms and carried me inside. He kicked the door closed with his leg and walked me down the hallway to the last door on the left. He pushed it open with his foot and flipped the light on. I am going to take a wild guess and say this was the master bedroom. It was really nice. There was a king size bed. With you can tell luxury sheets and comforter on it. A dresser with a Tv on it. Another dresser that had a vanity mirror attached to it. And another door that I am guessing led to the bathroom. And another small door I am assuming was the closet. He sat me down on the bed and just kneeled down in front of me and laid his head in my lap. I moved my fingers through his hair and I could hear him start to moan a little bit. He stayed there for a good 5 minutes until he leaned up kissing me and laid me down on the bed and getting on top of me. He slowly started running his tongue around mine as I was to his. He started kissing my neck and moving to my ears sucking on my ear lobes slowly whispering in my ear "I

love you" I just moaned "I love you baby" as he stood up and pulled me forward lifting up my dress over my head. I wrapped my arms around his neck pulling him into me again kissing him more. I do got to say he is an amazing kisser. He pulled away leaning up pulling his boots off and his socks. Undoing his pants and let them hit the floor. He had unbuttoned his shirt and undid his tie taking them off and chunking them across the floor. He slide down his boxer briefs to his cock ready to go. He laid me back down taking the edge of my panties and sliding them off. He climbed on top of me getting in between my legs. Kissing his way up my stomach to my boobs to my neck as I was starting to breathe heavier. He reached my lips and just kissed me biting down on my lower lip a little bit as he pushed the head of his dick inside of me. I gasped as he slowly but a little hard pushed the rest of it in. I wrapped my arms up his back and pulled him into me. As he pulled himself out and back in again. I was starting to breathe heavier and moan more as he was going faster.

He was kissing the side of my neck as I was gripping his lower back wrapping my legs around him tighter. "Oh god baby" he moaned "I love you" he continued. " I love you sweetie" I moaned as he started going faster and deeper inside of me. I could feel my pussy start to contract around his dick that was throbbing inside of me. I arched my back as I was actually cumming pretty fast and he knew it. "Its ok baby cum for me" he moaned in my ear and started to go faster that my legs were shaking and I was just moaning louder. "Ahhhhhhhhhhh ahhhh baby" I yelled. I could feel myself contract around him as I released myself on to him. He started moaning louder which he was about to cum too. He kissed me again then looked deep inside of my eyes as I saw his eyes roll back into his head and moaned cumming inside of me. He leaned down and kissed me. Then resting his head by my neck kissing this one spot on my neck over and over. I could still feel his dick inside me it was starting to get soft as he looked up and starred into my eyes. "I love you" he said "I love you" I said back. He just smiled at me and kissed me again. He was infact a very romantic guy. And I really did love it. "I guess we better get up baby" he said. "We have another together tonight I am sorry I couldn't get out of it" he said. "Its ok baby" I said "I will make it up to you I promise" he said kissing my forehead.

MY MASTER

#17

I was starting to wonder what kind of event we had to go to. I am sure it was like the last one. I think that he honestly has to go to make an appearance. Which I guess is fine. I have come to the conclusion I am not sure that I am right about this but he doesn't like being a master. I think he

was just doing it in his past just to ease his mind or maybe help with of the trouble he had already gone through. Until he met me. I dont know that once you are a master you could ever get out of it. I don't know that if its a life time thing you have to be committed to and your stuck if you don't want to do it any more. I am going to have to do some research on it one day when he is at work. He walked over to the closet and came out holding a blue dress it was pretty. "Can you wear this one tonight baby?" He asked. "Of course" I said getting up and taking it from him. He went into the closet again to get what he was wearing. "Baby?" I yelled. "Yes sweetie" he yelled back. "Is this going to be one of those parties where I have to call you Master?" I said. He stepped out of the closet wearing a pair of nice jeans walked over to me and said "No baby I would warn you a head of time if it was" he said wrapping my hair around my ear. "Ok babe" I said. He just winked at me and went back to the closet.

"Oh by the way if you need clean panties bras they are in the top drawer of the dresser" he yelled. I walked over to the dresser and pulled it open it was filled with any kind of panty you can think of and in each in different colors. Wow I thought to myself. And then I pulled the second drawer open and it was filled with tons and tons of bras. To push up, silky, lacey, strapless every thing really. I did grab a strapless bra because that dress was kind of thin at the top and didn't have any padding. I grabbed a matching pair of black silk bikini cut panties and put them on. I slide the dress on and it really did look good on me. I went into the bathroom. And noticed there was anything and everything I could think of for me. I found a couple of hair pins and pulled my hair tight back into a bun. I heard him walk up behind me wrapping his arms around me. "You look beautiful" he said. I just smiled at him. He was wearing the jeans and I button down shirt that he had tucked in. With a simple sports jacket over it. He put the same boots he had on earlier back on. He did look really nice. I decided just to put my heels back on that I had and called myself done. "What do you think?" I asked smiling at him. "Gorgeous baby" he said kissing me. We walked out to the car and got in.

We drove for about 15 minutes to another house different from the one we went to last time. He pulled up and parked. I had started to recognize some of the men that were walking in with their slaves from the last party. He just sighed and looked down. "Whats wrong baby?" I asked "Dont be mad ok?" He said "Ok" I said "This is your fathers house. Tonight he is hosting it. That is why I tried to get out of it" he said sadly. "Oh ok" I said "Don't worry I will protect you from him and anyone else" he said picking up my hand and kissing it. "Ok baby I trust you" I said "I hope so" he said kissing me. He opened the door and got out as I opened mine. I was really scared shitless. I walked up to him and he picked up my hand and I held it tight. "I know baby girl I know" he said as we started walking inside. We walked in he still held onto my hand and he knew that he wasn't going to let it go. He talked to a few guys pretty much the same ones as before as there was a lot more people this time. We were standing next to the stairs and I could hear a woman screaming like she was in pain and a man beating her. I am sure it was a master having his with his slave or another slave. I started to breath heavy and get nervous. Andrew noticed it and just hugged me whispering in my ear "its ok baby I love you" I just held him tight for minute as i let myself calm

down.

.  
He pulled away and kissed my forehead. "Well well hows the new couple doing?" A guy came up and asked Andrew. "Very good" Andrew said. "I heard you married your woman" the guy said. "Yes I did" Andrew said back. "Good for you most of us are not lucky to find the right woman" he said patting Andrews shoulder and looking over at me smiling. "So you married the whore" a voice said which I knew was my father. "Dont call her that" Andrew said getting defensive. And pushing me behind him. "You know the rules Mr Jules" he said "Fuck the rules no one is fucking touching her" Andrew yelled. "You agreed to this when you joined." My father got right back in his face. "Mr. Black is waiting for her upstairs." He said to Andrew. "Go fuck yourself its not going to happen" Andrew growled back. "Mr Jules I am warning you" my father said. "Try me" Andrew yelled. As another guy came up and swung at Andrew and they started going at it in a fist fight.

.  
I leaned back against the wall watching and scared half to death. I felt a hand go over my mouth and pull me. I couldn't even scream as I was taken away so fast. I was ran down a hall to another set if stairs. He dragged me up the stairs as I was trying to fight him but I got punched in the nose and started to black out some. He opened a door and threw me up in the bed. I heard him tell someone else. Here she is have fun. I couldn't and didn't want to open my eyes. I felt someone stand over. "Open your eyes slave" he said. I opened them fearing I would get beaten. To a tall bald man standing in front of me. He lifted up his shirt he did have a hairy chest and a little gut for a stomach. He undid his pants and his white under ware. He had a hard cock on and I knew I was about to get raped.

.  
He pulled my dress off I could hear it tearing and him just looking at me like I was a piece of meat. He yanked off my panties and climbed on top of me. Holding down my hands and forcing my legs open. I couldn't watch this. He started kissing my neck and biting it. He started running one of his hands up my thighs to my pussy and shoving 2 fingers inside. "Mmmm nice pussy slave" he growled in my ear. He reached over me to a night stand drawer and pulled out a condom and threw it at me. "Put it the fuck on my dick" he said. I didn't want to. So I just laid there. He slapped me across the face and yelled "pick it the fuck up and put it on" I grabbed it off my chest opened the package taking it out and reaching down to his dick and sliding it on. "Thank you bitch" he said. As he held my hands down as I started to feel himself get in between my legs. I started to gasp and cry. "Shut the fuck up" he said slapping me again. "Your master doesn't know how to fuck slaves so I am going to fuck you nice and good" he said kissing my neck and biting it hard that I screamed out. I could feel his dick searching for my pussy hole and it was a matter of seconds before he would find it.

.  
BAM. I heard the door open and Andrew coming flying through at him. He must of kicked the door open. And he just lunged at this guy. Knocking him off of me and both of them falling on the floor. I sat up crawling into a ball on the bed covering myself because I started to notice other guys walk up and watching to see what Andrew was doing. He just kept hitting this guy over and over again.



Yelling at him. I couldn't exactly hear what he was saying but he was beating the living shit out of him. "You are to never touch my fucking wife I don't give a shit whose house this is and who told you to do" he finally yelled getting up off the ground and standing up. He had a busted lip and a big red mark under his right eye which he probably got from that guy that hit him down stairs.

I know that my father put that man up to it. He walked up to me and picked me up wrapping my arms around him as he carried me out of the room. He walked me into another room shutting the door and locking it putting me down on this chair. He looked at me and just kissed me. I could taste the blood in my mouth from that guy slapping me. "Are you ok baby?" He asked. "Yes" I said shaking. "Did he umm baby..." I knew what he was asking so I cut him off. "No I wouldn't let him thats when he started slapping me" I said. I started crying as he just hugged me and held me close. And telling me he was here and everything was going to be alright.

MY MASTER

#18

My heart was still racing through my chest as he was holding on me tighter than he was. He kept sushing in my ear telling me that everything that everything was alright that he was here and I honestly couldn't stop crying. He pulled away and looked in my eyes. "Are you sure you are ok baby?" He asked "Yes... no" I said. "Tell me sweet heart" he said kissing me. "I was so scared baby and I didn't know if you were coming for me and he was about to.." I was still crying and barely got those words out when he cut me off "I know baby I know. It was your fathers idea. He set that guy up to pick a fight with me so they could grab you" he said "why would they do that?" I asked "Ok I guess I better tell you when a Master becomes an official master he has a few guidelines of his own. These are some old school rules that very few guys go by any more. But when a Master gets married to a woman he yes she is claimed by him permanently and is officially off the market to say. But any master can up and to pretty much fuck the other Masters wife one more time before she's permanently married and can't be touched unless given permission..well there are only a few guys here that are married baby and when they got married yes other guys did fuck and mess around with them about fucking their wife but they never did through with it. Because this group of masters do respect each other especially when one gets married. But just to be a big asshole I know your father did that just to set me over the edge and have you fucked with. But if a master is married and wants another master to fuck his wife he can arrange it. But any

other master cant ask the married master to have his woman if that makes sense." He said "It does" I said.

"Ok so don't worry I am never going to have another man touch you or have sex with you or anything ok baby?" He said I just shook my head yes as I was starting to calm down some. "I am going to guess and say my dad was open like that and passed my mother around even when they were married" I asked. "Yes baby your father is an asshole and ive never liked him from the beginning" he said. "Do you always want to be a master baby?" I finally asked.

He just sighed " I knew this was going to be asked one day. Yes and no. Yes to the point I have to if I quit I will be killed. And no because I have you now but its a life choice I choose about a year ago and its something I am stuck with and baby just trust me when that's all I can say about it" he said. I just shook my head yes wondering what else could there be and what wasn't he telling me. He leaned in and kissed me. "Thank you for trusting me and know I will always protect you" he said. "I know you always will" I said.

I was only sitting there in my bra and he looked at me and asked. "Where did he touch you?" He asked I just closed my eyes and said my breasts my lower body my thighs and..." I stopped "Tell me" he said. "He slide his fingers inside of me" I said looking down. "I am going to kill him" he said standing up. "Ahhh" he growled punching the wall. I just froze watching pace back and forth. I didn't know what to do. "Let's get out of here baby before I do something stupid" he said. "Um baby I have no clothes on" I said he just looked over at me. And then turned around" I will be right back" he said opening the door and shutting it.

I pulled this blanket that was on the chair over me until he got back. He came back a few minutes later with my dress. "Come here babe" he said as I stood up and dropped the blank as he lifted the dress over my head. He was torn up the side and one of the straps was too. He took off his jacket and wrapped it around me. He kissed my forehead and hugged me. "Lets go home baby" he said opening the door and picking up my hand and walking in front of me. As we walked down the hall way and down the stairs. We had a guy approach us which I think was one of Stephens good buddies.

"Everything alright bud?" He asked. "Yeah man" Andrew said. "Did he hurt your wife?" He asked. "No well he tried but I stopped it before anything happened" Andrew said to him. "Good he doesn't need to be disrespecting you and your wife like that" he said hugging him. Andrew just nodded and said "We are going to get out of here" "Alright man I will hala at you later on" he shaking Andrew hand. The man turned and smiled at me as I did back. As Andrew took my hand and we walked out the front door. We walked to the car he opened the door for me and I got in. He got in his side started the car and we drove home. We didn't say a single word about any of what happened and after that night we never did mention it again

.  
.  
.  
MY MASTER  
.  
.

#19  
.

.About 6 weeks had past since that night. We had not gone to another event. Andrew told me that they take place every couple of months. I still didn't know what my husband did for a living. He only went to work Monday thru Wednesday. And I still had to check in with him every couple of hours. Which I had no problem with we texted each other anyway all day from when he left about 7 am until he got home around 5:30. During the days he was off he would take me to fancy restaurants for dinner. Even took me one weekend to the beach. I had never been before in my whole life so I really enjoyed that. Especially taking a moonlight walk along the water then making love on the sand as the tide would roll up under us. I do not get to say getting sand up in your vagina afterwards was not fun but the experience of making love to my husband like that I really enjoyed.

.  
I heard Andrews alarm go off one morning as I was laying in his arms. My whole body especially my stomach and lower back was in so much pain. He kissed back of my neck and said "Good morning my love" as I just started to cry. "Whats wrong baby?" He asked sitting up "My stomach hurts really bad" I said "Oh baby do you think we should get you checked out?" He asked. I just nodded my head because I had never been in that much pain before. "Ok baby let me get dressed" he said climbing out of bed and running into the closet. I had wrapped my arms around my stomach and was in the fetal position just crying.

.  
He ran back over to me pulling the blanket off of me. And taking my arms and wrapping them around his neck and picked me up. I was at least wearing pajama pants and a tank top so he carried me out to the car and laid me down in the back seat. He ran over and got into the driver seat and started the car and drove. He picked up his phone and called someone "Hey man its Andrew do you mind looking at my wife she woke up in a lot of pain and your the only one I know who's a doctor.....ok thanks see you in a few" he said hanging up and throwing his phone down in the front seat.

.  
"Remember that guy you met at the last party as we were leaving?" He asked me "Yes" I said "We are going to go to his office hes a doctor ok baby" he said "Hes not the same psycho doctor you sent me to the first time is it?" I asked " No baby" he said "God" I said. He just continued driving I could tell he was speeding and started to get a bit of road rage. We got there pretty quickly. He parked jumped out opened the back door I sat up as I put my arms around his neck and he picked me up and carried me inside. His friend was already waiting for us.  
.

Andrew carried me into the back room and laid me down on the table. The other guy was right behind us. "Step out Andrew" the guy said "What?" Andrew questioned him "Just trust me I wont do anything to her" he said. He leaned down and kissed my forehead and told me he loved. Andrew walked out and the guy shut the door behind him. He walked up to be started asking me a bunch of questions about where the pain was and told him. He pushed around on my stomach. And then went and got some things and got some blood drawn from me to run a few tests. He asked me if could pee in a cup. And I just said yes as he helped me up and walked me to the bathroom he shut the door and I came back out handed him the cup and went back to the table and laid down. He had his back towards me as he was doing something over there and then mumbled.

"Thats what I thought" he turned around and said "I will be right back ok?" As he opened the door and shut it. Even though he shut the d door I could still hear him talking to Andrew. "So whats wrong with her?" Andrew asked. "Dude shes pregnant" he said. "What? Are you sure?" He asked "Yes the test came back positive shes in alot of pain because its the egg and sperm drilling into the uterus" he said. "Holy shit" Andrew said "Are you happy about it?" He asked Stephen "Yeah you have no idea. But thats going to send some people over the edge" he said. "Yeah i know its one thing when you marry one of them but to get them pregnant is different Andrew. Honestly I would pray to every God you can you have a son" he said. "Look what happened to her damn mother when she had a girl do you want that to happen to your wife..and Ricks wife had a daughter a few months ago look what happened to her" he said "I know I know" Andrew said.

"I know you love her Andrew but shits going to hit the fan if you have a daughter" he said. "I know I don't want to think about that" Andrew said. "Are you going to tell her or you want me to?" He said. "I will tell her man thanks but for now can we keep this between me and you" Andrew asked him. "Of course" he said. "Thanks bro I am going to go get her and take her home" he said. "Ok I will talk to you later" he said as I heard the door open. It was Andrew coming in. He walked up to me and kissed me.

"I love you baby" he said "I love you baby" I said "so whats wrong with me?" Acting like I didn't already know. He smiled at me and said "We are going to have a baby" "Are you happy baby?" I asked him " "You have no idea baby" he said kissing me. But in the back on my mind I was wondering what did him and his friend mean that if I have a daughter things are going to go bad for me. And what really did happen to my mother that they are not telling me

MY MASTER

.

.

.

When we got home I directly went to bed crawled up in and laid down. I didn't know what to think or even say to him. I honestly just needed him to tell me the truth. I felt him crawl up behind and wrap his arms around me. "I am very happy we are having a baby" he whispered. I really was too to be honest I just rolled over and smiled at him.

.

Fuck it I thought to myself even though this might start a fight I didn't care I needed to know. "Can you tell me the truth baby?" I asked him. "About what?" He asked "Why its bad if we have a daughter?" I said "You know about that?" He asked "Well you and your buddy the doctor are pretty loud talkers" I said "Oh" he sighed.

.

"Ok I will tell you. In the master society baby, it is a good thing to have a baby but only a son. A daughter to them is like a lowest of the low slave. That's another reason why your father treated you like shit growing up. You were a lower slave than an adult woman slave. But having a son makes them get praised pretty much. If the wife of a master has a son she is praised and treated like a goddess pretty much the way of taking away from her that she doesn't have the title of a slave any more. But if she has a daughter then she gets down graded to lower than her daughter." He said

.

"So what will happen to me if we have a daughter?" I asked "Well supposedly baby you are still technically married to me but I cant stop no one or have no say in if they want to do things to you. Remember that scream you heard at the last party?" He asked "Yes" I said. "That was Ricks wife she was getting punished by another Master for having a daughter. And I don't know if you noticed the man pacing and looking like he was about to kill everyone in sight. That was Rick. He had no say in it and one of the main masters took her and from what I was told beat her almost to death and raped her over and over again" he said.

.

"What if we have a daughter baby?" I started to cry. "Remember what I told you I would always protect you and if we have a daughter I won't let anyone hurt you even if I have to sacrifice myself" he said. "So are we allowed to find out the sex during the pregnancy?" I asked. "Traditionally no. They want you to wait until the baby is born. And which the doctor you met today he will be delivering our baby and I don't trust hospitals so I want you to have the baby at home. But I think I am going to be sneaky and have him find out if its a boy or girl that way if it is a girl I have some time to figure things out before she is born" he said "Ok" I said "Do you trust me baby?" He asked with sad eyes. "Yes I do baby" I said "Good I will have myself killed before I let anything happen to you or my baby" he said kissing me

.

.

.

## MY MASTER

.  
.  
#21  
.  
.

I didn't know if that was everything he was telling me but it did sound about right and why my father did treat me like shit. And why I remember he would take my mother out to places all dressed up and she would come back beaten up and her clothes torn or missing. I actually cried myself to sleep that night and I know he heard me as he rolled me over to where I was facing him and just held me close to him. I knew that he wouldn't let anything happen to me I did trust him on that part he did prove that the last time.

.  
But now things are more serious to the point I don't know if I can wait until we find out the sex of our baby and if we can be sneaky enough to do it. If we can't its going to be a long pregnancy of stress and worrying for the both of us. I could feel him hugging me tighter and running his hands up and down my back. I had stopped crying but just listening to his heart beat. He was starting to breathe faster and kind of sniffing his nose. I leaned over him and turned on the bed room lamp and looked at him.

.  
He was crying. I whipped the tears from his eyes and kissed him. He still had tears rolling down his face. "Don't cry baby" I said "I can't help it baby I fucked every thing up" he said "How did you do that?" I asked "You didn't know we were going to have a baby you can't help that" I said. "We could of prevented it baby and now I have you in one of the worse fucked up situations that I never wanted to put you in" he said "But it happened baby and either way it would of happened either way rather now or years from now" I said " I just didn't want it to happen this soon baby I am sorry I finally have the woman of my dreams some one I love and it might be stripped away from and hurt me in ways I cant imagine" he said.

.  
I really didn't know what to say to him. "I should of just kept using condoms like I did the first night we had sex" he said. I just closed my eyes imagining that first night how he did those things to me and he that when he said that those memories popped back into my mind as I started breathing heavy and clenching my fists together. "O am so sorry baby" he said "For what?" I mumbled. "Doing those bad things to you" he said "Oh is that your apology finally" I said. "Baby please" he said "No Andrew I have waited a while for an apology from you. That I didn't expect at first but was hoping I would get it that your sister even told me to let you open up to me and you never did. You never apologized to me for any of it. How badly you hurt me. How look" I said putting my chest in his face

.  
"Look they are still there they have turned into scars and how it reminds me of the night my husband took a whip to me and beat the shit out of me." I said. "I know baby I am so sorry. I have

to look at them too and it kills me inside that I did that to you" he said " I am sorry for getting angry but I have that right. I trusted you the first time I talked to you on the computer and you took that away from me after what you did" I said. "And now that we are having a baby you give me the apology after I should have gotten it along time ago" my voice got a little louder than I wanted it to so I just stopped.

He was starring at me with those eyes I have seen before in the past and I didn't know if I just fucked up or not. He was breathing in and out really fast and really hard just glaring at me. "Say something baby" I said "I am still your fucking master you knew what you were getting yourself into when you married me. Yes I have changed and yes I will admit it was all because of you. I do fucking love you more than anything and every one on my life and yes I feel like shit every day when I see those marks on you. Especially when I am making love to you I look down and see them." He said sitting up next to me. He grabbed my face and kissed me. "But you have got to believe me that I am sorry that I am so sorry" he said as he held on to me and just cried

MY MASTER

#22

I just sat there and let him hold me. I know deep down he is sorry but he didn't have to pull the master shit with me. He hasn't used that since the day we got married which just shows me when he doesn't get his way with me he is going to use it. Which to me hurts me more.

He leaned back and looked at me. I know I had a blank expression on my face because I honestly didn't know what to think or even say to him. He told me he would never use the master word again unless he had to at certain events but he straight up used it because I raised my voice to him.

"What will make you happy baby?" He asked With my straight face I said "Not to be a slave to a master" he started crying again and pressed his forehead against mine. "You got it baby" he said looking at me straight in my eyes. "Prove it to me" I said. "It might take some time baby but I swear on our babies life" he said while placing his hand on my stomach. "I will get away from it all. I will no longer be a master you a slave and our baby will be born not worrying about any of it" he said "How can I believe that you told me you were stuck with it for life" I said.

"There is ways out of it baby but its something I have to dig into. I've heard rumors that its happened before and I swear I will make it happen. I will be damned if my daughter will be a

fucking slave" he said "You think we are having a girl?" I asked. He just smiled at me and said "Yes baby I do" he said. "That's why I was crying in the first place I just have this feeling its a girl" he said while tearing up again.

.  
He leaned in and kissed me. Sliding his tongue in my mouth then pulling away and looking into my eyes. "Do you forgive me for everything?" He asked "I am not going to lie it hurts me that you did those things to me that you put markings on me that I am sure are not going to go away. I am not going to lie either the first couple of days I was just terrified and scared of you. But you had this side of you that I did start to fall for. That it did turn into me loving you. And that part will never change. I fall more and more in love with you every day baby but I have tried to put what happened behind me and it is baby and I am getting better at it but that doesn't mean that I don't love you. Then when you pulled the master card again I was actually scared you were going to hit me or something" I said.

.  
He just had these sad eyes and I knew he was sorry for what he did to me but that will always be in my mind. He picked up my hand and kissed it looking into my eyes "When I did those things to you I didn't know you were my soulmate I know that's not how you treat a lady and that's not how I was raised but joining that group when I got back and out of the Marines I was hoping that it would erase my past and the messed up things people who I loved and cared about one point and time did to me. but when I made love to you for the first time I saw something in your eyes that shocked the hell out of me. And I knew I had fucked up that I had with me the love of my life and I had fucked up the beginning of our relationship by doing those things to you. And now I have a beautiful wife and baby on the way I am starting to have the family I have always dreamed about and wanted. I knew I shouldn't of said I was your master a little bit ago that was another mistake I deeply apologize for. I had promised you that I was never going to call you my slave and you never had to call me your master ever again. And I am going to live up to the promise I just made to you and our baby I will get us out of this" he said. I just looked into his deep green sad eyes and just smiled "I am going to hold you to it" he just smiled back at me and kissed me. "God I love you baby" he said "I love you more" I said "What!!! That is the first time you have ever said that baby" he said "Well better fucking believe it" I smiled at him as we just kissed each other

.  
.  
.  
.  
.  
MY MASTER

.  
.  
#23

.  
.  
A few days had past as Andrew had taken a vacation from work apparently he had 2 weeks of



vacation saved so he decided now would be a good time to take it. He thought it would be great to spend a few days together then tomorrow night he was going to go to this event by himself. He thinks that if he goes in there with me and starts asking questions about wanting to quit they would try something with me again.

Which I can't say I blame him. He said that no one knows where we live that no one knows exactly where each master lives. They just know their second homes which is where they hold the parties at. He told me that he had talked to his doctor buddy which his name was Zack to make sure he hadn't told anyone that I was pregnant and he said that he hasn't.

He told me that Zack and him used to be in the Marines together and Zack is the one that got him going to the master slave parties at first. We were laying in bed watching a movie when I just out of know where asked him "Baby what do you even do for a living?" He just kind of chuckled and said "I still work for the Marines as a independent civilian contractor" "Oh ok" I said "What did you think I did baby?" He asked "I don't know you just worked a few days a week but have a butt load of money" I said "Yes the pay is pretty good and most of the money that I used like to buy the cars and the house baby was the money I saved up from being deployed" He said.

"Oh ok I was just curious" I said "you know you can ask me anything you want baby any time you want" he said "I will keep that mind" I smiled at him. He just winked at me and pulled me closer into him kissing the top of my head. "Ok I got another one for you" I said sitting up next to him. "Shoot my love" he said "You wanna have sex?" I said, smiling at me. "Is that a rhetorical question" he asked as he leaned over and started kissing me rolling me over on my back as he got on top of me. Leaning back and pulling my shirt off as he pulled off his.

He guided and slide down my pajama pants and my panties with it. He started to get up and take his boxers off when I stopped him. "Nope you lay down its my turn to be in charge" I said he just smiled at me as he rolled on to his back and I got up on top of him. I started kissing down his stomach to the edge of his boxers taking my fingers under the edge and sliding them off.

His cock was half hard as I took it into my hand and started stroking it a little I could feel it grow and start to get hard in my hand. As I leaned down and took it into my mouth sucking on the head of it a little bit. I felt his hands start running through my hair as he started moaning a little and breathing heavy. I slide it all the way down my the deep throat feeling it throbbing inside of my mouth. I start sucking faster as I could hear him moan more and gripping the side of my head guiding it up and down his dick. I started to taste the saltiness of his precum so I knew it was time to stop.

I climbed back on top of him leaning up and kissing him. As I picked up his dick and started it up and down my pussy lips. "Want it baby?" I asked "Yes baby" he said as I slide the head in my pussy and slowly sat down on it feeling it go all way deep inside of me. I saw his eyes roll in the

back of his head as it was going inside. I started moving my hips back and forth slowly but kept going faster. He moved his hands to my nipples and started playing with them as I started going up and down on his cock faster.

"Oh god baby" he moaned "ohhh you like it baby?" I moaned "Oh yes baby" he said as I arched putting my hands behind me and going to town on his dick. It really did feel amazing. I leaned down and kissed him really passionate and slowly. I whispered "get behind me baby" "Are you sure baby?" He asked "Yesss" I moaned as I got off of him and rolled over and got on all fours. He got up behind me and took his cock and rubbed it up and down my pussy. He grabbed my hips and he pushed the head of his cock inside and pushing it all the way in. He kept thrusting in and out harder and faster. As I was just moaning louder and loader. "I am cumming baby" I yelled "Oh shit me too baby" as we both at the same time started moaning louder as he was thrusting harder.

I could feel my pussy tighten around his dick as he thrust deep one more time as he came inside of me and I came all over him. He leaned down and started kissing my back as he still had his cock in my pussy. He pulled himself out as I turned around at him. "That was fucking hot baby" he said "Yes it was" I said as he leaned down and kissed me. "I love you baby girl" he said out of breath " I love you sweetie" I said as he plopped down next to me. "Its ok to have to have sex while your pregnant right?" I asked him "I believe so baby may be not hard and fast like that every time but I am pretty sure you can" he said as I laid my head on his chest as he wrapped his arm around me and kissing the top of my head.

I pulled up the blanket over us as we held on to each tightly as we finished the movie even though we just missed half of it

MY MASTER

#24

It was the next night and I was watching Andrew get ready. He told me he shouldn't be gone but a couple hours but if he is gone more than 4 hours to hide in our safe room. He had a safe room put in shortly after we moved in. We did have a basement that when you walked down it it just looked like a normal laundry room. But if you went into the closet down there there was another room that led into a room that way pretty much a cement wall room.

Only him and I had a key to it and that if something happened I needed to go down there and he would get to me as soon as he can. He came out of the bathroom wearing a nice pair of jeans and a blue polo shirt. He wore these leather boots. I could tell he put cologne on because I could smell it half way across the room. He had this nervous but blank look on his face and I could tell he was nervous about going. Especially them knowing we are married I am supposed to go with him to every event.

He was going to tell them I was sick or something and that he told me to stay home so I guess it doesn't look like it was my idea. I was sitting on the edge of the bed just watching him as he walked over to me. He didn't say anything just wrapped his arms around me and held me. I could hear his heart racing that I knew he was getting nervous. I just wrapped my arms around his waist and let him hold me. I could tell he needed it. He pulled back and looked sadly at me. Someone had to break the silence so I did.

"How do you think it's going to go?" I asked. "I really don't know baby girl. I am going to tell them that you're not with me because you're sick. But I can't just walk up to Leon (who is the head Master by the way) and say hey I want to quit you know?" He said "Yeah I guess so what are you going to do?" I asked. "Since Zack knows more about the Masters than I do I am going to talk to him first. Because his father was a Master baby and when his father passed away last year Zack pretty much took his spot." He said "Oh ok" I said "See baby apparently a son in this masters group hasn't been born in over I think Zack said 12 years. Every since it's been girls born. And Zach was one of the last ones that was born into it.

So when a master passes away and if he has a son his son will take his rank automatically." He said. "So what if the master dies and he has a daughter?" I asked. "Depending on the age of his daughter she is usually sold off and his wife is taken up by another Master" he said. "Oh" I sighed. "Trust me baby I will get us 3 out of this. Like I said I will not have my daughter be a slave" "Still stuck on our baby being a girl?" I laughed. "Yeah don't you?" He asked. I just smiled and said "You never know what our baby could be". He just smiled and kissed me.

"While I am there I am going to see when Zack can see you again you know you're still going to have regular appointments I want to see how my kiddo is doing" he smiled at me. "Yes I do too" I said. He just sighed and said "Alright my love I got to go but remember what I said. I am going to have to leave my phone in the car but I will call you on my way home. But even if I am on my way home and it's been 4 hours go downstairs" "Alright baby I will" I said "Thank you baby" he said as I stood up and hugged him and letting him hold me. He kissed me goodbye and leaned down and kissed my stomach. "I love you baby girl" he said kissing me one more time. "I love you baby" I said as he grabbed his keys off the dresser and left. I heard the garage door open and the car start as I looked out the bedroom window and saw the back headlights of the car drive away

.  
MY MASTER  
.

.  
#25  
.

.  
I was so nervous about what would happen that I got bored out of my mind waiting. He had only be gone about 45 minutes. He did send me a quick text about 20 minutes ago saying he was there and would call me when he left. I decided to waste time by watching a movie but that only lasted an hour and 30 minutes and I was checking my phone every 10 minutes.  
.

I decided to get up and clean the dishes from dinner. And that didn't take that long. It was approaching the 3rd hour since he had left. But I didn't know rather to count the time from when he left or actually got there. I was so nervous and worried it was making my stomach go in knots. I kept hearing cars go by and I would catch myself looking out the window to see if that was him or not but it ended up not being him.  
.

I kept hearing noises outside but it was or at least I convinced myself it was just the rain storm that was coming in. He had about 30 more minutes. I knew that he would probably get shit for me not being there sick or not I really don't think they gave a damn. I knew that I would eventually have to go to another event that until he got us out of this mess I had to put on a happy fucking face and go and he knew it too.  
.

The lights started flickering off and on the storm was slowly knocking the power out. I climbed into bed and under the covers holding my phone in my hand watching the time slowly turn. The lighting crashed and it scared me so much that I pulled the blanket over my head and started breathing heavily. "Come on Andrew you got 15 minutes at least call me and tell me you are on your way back" I said out loud. I pulled the blanket back as the lights went out completely. I couldn't see anything except the light from my phone. I knew that there was a flashlight in the kitchen drawer and I needed to go get it.  
.

I used my phone as a light and walked down the hallway. I will admit it anytime to anyone that I am scared of the dark. I have childhood memories of that. That I prefer not to get into right now. I used my hand to guide myself down the hallway into the kitchen. Panicking because I couldn't find the drawer handle. I just had to breathe and calm myself down and I did and eventually found the handle and pulled it open and started searching for the flashlight. I finally grabbed it and tried to turn it on. It wouldn't come on so I banged it against the counter top and it finally twitched on.  
.

It was like a relief that it came on. I looked down at my phone. He had 7 minutes. I walked back

into the living room by the front door. I saw a car pull up into the driveway but the garage door didn't open. And Stephen would put his car in the garage. I saw the driver door open and a man get out. I couldn't tell if it was him or not. That's when I panicked and dropped the flashlight and ran to the other side of the house to the laundryroom. I bolted down the stairs and to the other room. But I couldn't get the door open. I could hear foot steps coming behind me as I panicked even more.

I couldn't get the damn heavy door to push open. I turned and ran the other direction not knowing if this person was in the laundry room yet or not and I didn't give a shit I ran up the stairs and ran right smack into this man. I just screamed as I heard "Baby baby its me calm down" as he picked me up and held me as I was still screaming and fighting him.

"Baby stop honey its me" I could smell his cologne and I knew it was him. I just wrapped my arms and legs around him as I just cried. "I am home baby its ok" he said. "You didn't call me" I said. "My phone battery died baby I am sorry that's why I rushed home" he said. "Why did you park in the driveway?" I asked "The damn garage door clicker isn't working or the storm knocked it out or some shit" he said.

I just gripped him tighter as he did me as the lights started to flicker back on. I pulled away and looked at him. He had a swollen eye and busted up lip. I tried touching his lip but he kind of jerked away at me. I saw the sadness in his eyes. He put me down and took my hand. "Come on I will tell you what happened" he said as we walked to our room

MY MASTER

#26

He walked me over to the bed as I sat down. He kissed my forehead and turned and walked in to the closet. He came back out wearing only pajama pants and walked up to me. He wrapped his arms around me and just hugged me. He was breathing really heavy. He kissed the top of my head. And sighed really deeply as he held me.

"What happened baby?" I asked. He still held on to me as he told me. That when he got there every thing was going alright. He had met up with Zack and they were talking that people would come up and ask where I was and he just told them I was sick and he made me stay home. No one really had a problem with it until my father over heard the conversation. He made a big deal about me not being there.

.

He started making comments about how he needed to keep his woman in check. Well we all know that Andrew has a short temper and he smarted off to my father about how it was none of his business about how he treated me. Then my father made a comment about how just you wait until she starts producing little bastards or slaves. Thats when Andrew snapped and got defensive.

.

He said that my father kind of laughed and said oh so you already have a little slave on the way. Thats when Andrew tried to swing at my father and him and my father got into it. And then one of my father's right hand man got into it as well. That Zack and another guy named Joseph pulled Andrew off of the guy. As my father just laughed and walked away saying that he just regretted hitting him.

.

Thats when Zack pulled him outside and told him that if he wanted to get out and quit he needed to approach my father. And pretty much kiss is ass because fighting with him isn't going to help. That he said there are somethings that will happen in order for everything to stop and go away but he didn't know the specifics that only my father and Leon did. And since I was technically my fathers daughter that Andrew had to approach him first.

.

I pulled away from him and looked at him. He had tears in his eyes and he knew that he probably shouldn't of did that to my father because it might of made things worse for our situation. "I am sorry baby but I will keep my promise and I will get us out of this" he said. "I know baby" I said. "Zack thinks its a good idea for you to come to the one thats tomorrow night and that I need to be on my best behavior" he said "Ok" I just nodded. I knew that I would have to face my father another time and it sounds like Andrew needs to as well and get on my father's good side.

.

But I know how my father is I grew up with him this is going to be a hard thing to do. "I do got some good news though" he said "What my father is dying" I laughed. "No baby but that would be nice but no I talked to Zack and we get to see our baby Monday morning" he said. I just smiled he knew saying that would make me smile. "I can't wait" I said "Me either baby girl" he said lifting me up off the bed and kissing me

.

.

#27(bonus)

.

It was the next morning and I got woken up to breakfast in bed that Andrew made. "Is this your way of sucking up to me I have to go tonight?" I said "Maybe...is it working?" He asked "Egh" I said as I started to eat. "I think we should go see my sister today" he said "Sure baby" I said "I still haven't told her we are having a baby yet" he said "Do you think she will be happy?" I asked "Oh yeah" he said laughing "She has always wanted me to be happy and have a wife and kids" he

said.

.  
He just smiled at me as I finished eating. "Can I ask you something else baby?" I said "Sure my love" "Why don't you talk to anyone else in your family" I said. He just sighed and told me that he does have another sister she moved away a long time ago and disowned all of the family and no one really knows why. That his mother and father got divorced when he was in high school and his mother didn't really talk to him after she got remarried.

.  
That is dad passed away when he was deployed of lung cancer and he had missed the funeral but he knew that his dad did love him and was proud of him. "I know my dad is upset with me about what I did when I got out but I am making up for it at least trying too. He wouldn't approve of any of it. But I hope he is now considering I am fixing the mess I have got myself into with my wife and my child. I am sure he would be excited to have a grand child because this is his first.

.  
My sister you met is only married she can't have children. And honestly we have no idea if my other sister is married had kids" he said. "Oh" I said "Why don't we wait until Monday to go see her what way we can show her an ultrasound picture?" I said. He just smiled "That is actually a good idea baby girl" he said kissing me. He picked up the plate and took it back to the kitchen. And came back wearing nothing. Literally nothing and just smiled at me. He climbed in to on top of me and just kissed me really long biting my lower lip.

.  
He pulled down my shorts and panties. Kissing my inner thighs as I knew where he was going. I started to breath heavier and deeper as he reached my pussy. Running his tongue up and down the lips. I gasped as it felt really good. He spread my lips apart with his fingers and started sucking on my clit. "Mmmmmm oh baby" I moaned as he was doing it harder. He looked up and smiled at me climbing on top of me lifting my shirt off and sucking on my nipples while his cock was in between my legs searching for my pussy hole.

.  
He arched his back and thrust it in as I moaned loudly. He started going really fast and deep really quickly. He wanted it and he was enjoying it. He would lean out and bite on my neck as he kept going faster and harder. Making the head board bang against the wall. "Ahhhh ahhhh" I moaned as he squinted his eyes and was just going to town. "I am cumming baby" he moaned "Cum with me" he said.

.  
I was starting to feel myself cum even before he said that as I looked into his eyes and he rolled his eyes back in to his eyes grunting and moaning as he thrust and twitched inside of me cumming. As I exploded all over his dick. We were both out of breathe as he looked up at me and kissed me. " I am sorry baby I didn't know what came over me" he said.

.  
I just smiled and kissed him. "Its ok baby I enjoyed it" he climbed off of me and stood up i got out of bed and took his hand and walked into the bathroom. "We can do it again nice and slow in here"

as I kissed him and he smiled turning on the shower

MY MASTER

#28

We laid in bed pretty much all day. I do got to I really enjoyed it. I didn't really get nervous about going until we actually were in the car and were driving there to the point I was hyperventilating in the car as we were drove up into the driveway. Andrew looked at me and picked up my hands. I had my head almost down between my legs trying to catch my breath but it was hard.

I was so nervous I was panicking. "Look at me baby" he said. I couldn't do it. He turned himself and me that we were facing each other. ;Look at me sweetheart" he said pulling my head up by chin so that I was looking at him. "Do you trust me?" He asked "Yes" I said "I just don't trust my father you weren't there when I was growing up. He did things to me I couldn't even tell you. Stuff you don't even know about. And our fate is in his hands" I said. "I know baby I know but I promised you and our baby I won't mess this up. I know our relationship started out bad really bad but look where its gotten us. You are my soul mate my better half and I honestly don't know what I would do without you. You have changed me. And now we have a baby on the way which I couldn't be more happy about. I will get us out of this baby. " He said whipping the tears away from my eyes.

"I know you didn't trust me in the beginning and you slowly have started to and getting us out of this will hopefully prove to you how much I care and you can trust me 100%." He said "Ok baby" I said smiling "Then lets go inside tonight shouldn't be bad" he said "Yeah tell my stomach that" I said. He just smiled and kissed me. As we both got out of the car. He held my hand tight and pulled me against him as we walked inside.

"By the way when we get home we are going to have a talk baby" he said "About what?" I asked "I want you to tell me everything your father did to you I don't care how upset pissed off I get I want to know" he said "Ok baby" I said as we got up to the front door and was greeted by Zack.

"Well well its my new favorite couple" he said "feeling any better?" He asked me "Yes alot" I said. "Thats good. So Andrew can we have a word?" He asked I tightened his hand into mine as I knew that meant he would have to leave me alone. He just nodded at Zack and said" Yeah meet me over by my car in a few minutes" Zack just nodded and walked away towards Andrews car.



He looked at me and said "Just stay right here I will be able to see you from here" he said. I just gulped on my own spit and said "Ok" "I will be right back baby if someone tries anything just yell for me baby" I just shook my head yes as he undid his hand from my tight grip and kissed me. Then walked towards the car.

I walked a few steps out so that I wasn't standing directly in front of the door. I saw him get to the car and start talking to Zack he looked over and waved at me and I just gave him a quick smile and sat down on the step. A few minutes had passed when I felt someone hand touch my shoulder I jumped thinking the unknown and turned around.

"Amelia is that you?" I looked and just smiled and said "Mom" she smiled at me and walked in front of me. Putting her hands on my face just staring into my eyes. I could tell she was sad and didn't know what to say but wanted to say something. "Can we talk baby?" She asked.

She has only called me baby one other time I can remember. My father never let her talk to me about anything. "Wouldn't dad get mad?" I asked "I am not your fathers anymore baby" she said. I just smiled at her. I knew she was happy about that and I can't say I blame her. She reached out her hand and I took it as she pulled me up as we were facing each other. She took one of my hands as we started walking down the pathway. I looked over as Andrew had this concerned looked on his face. I didn't want to stop my mother I have never had a heart to heart with her. This might not be a heart to heart but its something. I just smiled at Andrew as he kinda smiled back at me. That I would explain to him later

MY MASTER

#29

My mom and I walked across the lawn to this bench that was under a tree. Andrew could still see me in his sight as I would catch him looking over at me and kind of glarring at my mom. But I can't say I blame him he doesn't know that she is my mom.. "So how long have you been with him?" She asked.

"Not long" I said. "Are the rumors true?" She asked. "Depends what you heard" I said. "Did you marry him?" She asked. "Yes" I said "Are you having a baby?" She asked "Yes" I said "How's

everything working out wait how did you even meet a man like Andrew Jules?" She asked "Its a long story but we are happy he doesn't treat me like some of the people here. He doesn't refer to me as his slave or me calling him master. He actually calls me baby sweetie things like that. He takes me to expensive restaurants he pampers and spoils the shit out of me." I said "Do you love him?" She asked "Yes I do" I said she just smiled at me and petted my hair. I wore it down tonight.

"I understand why now things happened when I was growing up" I said. "I wanted to tell you so badly but you know your father" she sighed. "Yeah don't remind me" I said. "Can I ask you something?" I asked her "Yes" she said "What happened the night I was born?" I asked "Well baby you were born at home I had been in labor for 3 days your father was no help he just sat around and complained that I was taking too long. The doctor finally came into the room which your father made me have you in our guest room he didn't want his room to get messy. It took me 30 minutes to push you out. I was so nervous and scared but I knew you were a girl deep down I knew. As soon as you came out you screamed so loud and cried. He immediately took you away from me and to your father. I could hear your father complaining and cussing that you were a girl. You know I didn't get to see you until you were almost a month old. I got sent to a mental hospital by your father. He hired a nanny to take care of you. The mental hospital let me go because they said there was nothing wrong me but of course your father argued with them about it and he had no other choice but to take me. I wasn't allowed near you or to even speak to you. You called the nanny mommy which broke my heart even more. Your first words to me was that you asked me to come play with you because nobody else would. And that's when you were almost 2. When you started talking more and asking to play with me your father finally told you I was your mother and I remember it like it was yesterday you looked straight at me and smiled really big running into my arms. I was only allowed to be with you for 2 hours out of the day. Which made you scream and cry more. The first time your father put his hands on you that I know of was your 4th birthday. I made you a cake and brought it to you. You started to sing out aloud to yourself and your father came busting out of his office taking you by the arm and beating you with his belt. I cried for a week straight because I saw what he did. Every mess you made I took the blame for it because I didn't want him to touch you but he caught on and we both ended up getting it." She said while starting to cry.

"Mom stop" I said "I am glad you found some one that treats you good" she said. "Me too" I said "Andrew thinks we are having a girl" I said "What do you think it is?" She asked "I am not sure yet" I said "You will know when you hear the heart beat for the first time that's when I knew" she said "We go Monday" I said. "Your going to be a great mom Andrew is a nice guy I can't see him being the way your father was" she said "Hes not" I smiled at her.

"How is your new man master or whatever you call him?" I asked "Amazing. His name is John he's the guy in the blue suit" she said pointing by the door "How did you end up with him?" I asked "Well you ran away so I didn't have a purpose with your father any more. And he sold me. And John doesn't treat me bad doesn't hit me nothing like that. When I told him you were my daughter

and I hadn't really talked to you in a long time that was the first time he put his foot down and said for me to go talk to you" she said.

I just smiled. "Sounds like a good guy" I said. "He is. I guess I better get you back to your husband he keeps glaring at me" she said "Yeah he will understand when I tell him" I said standing up. She stood up to and smiled at me. She took my hand and kissed it. "You are a good person and I know you have a great husband and life ahead of you" she said. "Thank you" I said. As we started walking up towards the house. Andrew started walking towards us as I stopped in front of him.

My mom kept in walking. "Are you alright baby?" He asked "Yes" I said "Who was that?" He asked "My mom" I said. "Everything go alright?" He asked. I just shook my head and plunged into his hugging him tight. He wrapped his arms around me and held me. "

"Come on baby lets go home" he said "Dont we have to stay?" I asked "No baby I am taking you home" he said as I pulled back and he wrapped his arm around me as we both walked to the car and went home

#30(bonus)

I don't think Andrew knew what to say to me on the way home. I would still catch him staring at me but like a nervous look like he wanted to ask me something but couldn't spit it out. "Just ask me baby" I said "I figured you would tell me when you were ready" he said as we pulled up into the driveway. "I will tell you everything when we get inside baby" I said. I knew he was curious about what my mom and I talked about which is fine because he doesn't know what kind of person my mom is.

And growing up I didn't either. I knew that he also wanted to know what my father did to me I can't tell him everything because a lot of it I don't remember myself. I just remember the after math. We walked inside and I went straight to our room he followed me after setting the alarm and locking up. I changed out of my dress and into some boxers and a tank top. I went to the bathroom and got a glass of water and crawled into bed. He came in the room as I just sat down into bed. He smiled at me as he started stripping his clothes off.

He I don't think cared at this point if they made it into the clothes hamper or not. He just stripped down to his boxer briefs and crawled into bed. He got under the covers and just looked at me. I just leaned over and hugged him. "whats wrong baby girl?" He asked "I just love you" I said "Oh I love you baby but I know your full of it right now" he said kind of laughing. I just held on to him and told him everything my mom and I talked about. Even the parts of what my father did to me as a

child. That is the part I didn't really want to look at him in the eyes for. I could hear him breathing deeper as I was telling him. Who knows what he was thinking.

.  
"Tell me everything baby" he said. I just sighed and said "I blocked out most of my childhood because of that reason. I never did get to enjoy birthdays you know how some people joke about getting birthday spankings well I actually got them. With a thick leather belt. I remember once he broke my arm because he twisted it back so hard and fast because I wouldn't answer him fast enough. I remember several times being beaten and locked in a closet for days without food or water. He would never let me go anywhere or do anything. Every Friday night I had to clean the house in a certain way and if one little thing he didn't like I got smacked for it. By the time I was in middle school I was put into a private school and then eventually home schooled because I never went to school with black eyes busted noses beat marks. I had to make the perfect grades or I would get it. I remember once I came home and he had some friends over and my father was joking to his friends that even though I was a girl I pulled off some pretty good grades. It didn't mean much to me now but it does now."

.  
I could feel his hands running up and down my back as he was still breathing heavy and I could hear his heart pounding. I looked up at him and I was expecting a look of evil or something but it was a sad lost face. I sat up next to him and whispered in his ear, "Now I have you and I never have to worry about any of that". He just pulled me in close to him "You sure don't baby and you don't have to worry I would never do anything like that to our children. Boy or girl" he said.

.  
I pulled away and looked at him and said "You want more than one?" "Well yeah you can't just have one" he said. "Oh lord" I said laughing "What?" He asked "How many kids would you like?" I asked "2 maybe 3" he said smiling. "Why don't I just have them all at once" I said joking "Nah" he said "I won't make you have that many if you don't want to baby its your body that has to pregnant and go through everything" he said "I will think about it" I said "Thats all I ask" he said. As we started kissing each other really long soft and passionately.

.  
"By the way what did Zack want?" I asked "Oh that he was going to go home and that I should bounce too. Then we got to talking about our plans thats why we went out to the car. But we decided to talk about it more tomorrow since no one will be around" he said "Whats tomorrow?" I asked "Really baby you don't remember were going to see our baby" he said "Oh it's Monday already?" I said "Yes sweetheart today is Sunday" he said laughing then kissed my forehead. I just laid my head back down on his chest as we fell asleep in each others arms. I was really excited about tomorrow.

.  
.  
.  
.  
.  
.  
MY MASTER

.  
.  
#31  
.

I woke up in the middle of the night just wide awake. I looked over and saw Andrew just passed out cold. I do got to say since he has changed his face and body does look healthier. More attractive. Maybe it was all of the anger built up in him I don't know. I got up and went to the bathroom and when I came out I decided that I didn't want to lay back down.

.  
I went into the kitchen and made me a cup of coffee. I know I am not supposed to drink coffee that much being pregnant but one cup isn't going to hurt. I opened the back door that led out to the patio. I just stood there looking out into our back yard sipping the coffee slowly. Every little thing was running through my head. But mostly about our baby.

.  
I never prayed to God before but that night I did for the first time. I never asked God to save me from my father that was something I knew I had to do on my own. But as I stood there looking up at the sky and seeing this one shooting star thats when I decided just to pray in my head. That I didn't want my child to be a part of this. To be born into it rather we not have a boy or girl just not at all.

.  
That my husband would live up to his word and get everything taken care of. That my father would just let us be free and have a family and raise our baby without all of this bullshit. I just closed my eyes and thought about my child. How I have someone that I made inside of me and I want to do anything in my power to protect him or her. As I was just standing there in silence I felt Andrews's hands wrap around my stomach from behind me and kissing my neck. I have gotten so familiar with his hands I can recognize them right away.

.  
"What are you doing my love?" He asked "Just thinking baby" I said "About what?" He asked "Our baby" I said "I hope its good things" he said "Of course baby just want him or her to be here already" I said. "I know how you feel baby" he said kissing my neck again in the same spot that he has been every 10 seconds since he has come outside.

.  
"Come on baby lets go inside its too cold for you to stand out here in your underwear" he said "Yeah I know baby" I said turning around and wrapping my arms around his neck. "I love you baby girl" he said as he wrapped his arms around me. "I love you baby" I said in his ear. He took the coffee cup from my hand and took my hand with his other hand. And we walked in he sat the cup on the bar and we walked down the hallway to our room. "Did we have a little panic baby?" I said as I looked and he I guess when he realized I was gone threw the blankets on the floor.

.  
"Just a tad I didn't know where you were until I started running down the way and past the kitchen

and saw you just standing there" he said. "Sorry just needed some fresh air" I said. "Don't be baby" he said as we both climbed into bed. We laid facing each other as he was running his fingers through my hair then to the side of my face. "I hope our daughter has your eyes" he said. "What are you going to do if your wrong about it being a girl" I said. "Love him just the same but its a girl baby" he said laughing. "We shall see" I said as he kissed me one time before going back to sleep

.  
.  
#32 (last insert for the day)

.  
.  
.  
We had to meet Zack pretty early for the appointment. But that's alright. I laid in bed as long as I could until Andeew was fully dressed and had sat on the bed next to me. "Come on sweet heart we got to go" he said. "I know I just don't want to get up; I said laughing. "Yeah but its a good reason to get up baby" he said "Yes I know I just feel really blah today" I said "What does blah mean?" He asked

.  
"Just achy don't want to move that kind of thing" I said. "Is it bad?" He asked "No not really I am sure all the aches and pains I get are going to be normal; I said "Normal or not you gotta tell me if anything is hurting" he said "I will babe don't worry" I said getting up and getting dressed. I didnt really get dressed. I just went into the closet and put on a hoodie and some yoga pants over my boxers I was wearing and some flip flops. And called it a day.

.  
I came out into the living room and he just stared at me "Your going to wear that?" He asked "Yup" I said. "Ok then let's go". "Thats right let's go" I said laughing. He just smiled at me as we walked outside to the car. We both got in and went. It was literally like 10 minutes away. We pulled up and got out he held my hand tight in his as we walked into Zack's office. He was already there bright and early.

.  
"You guys ready?" He came out asking us. "Lets do it" I said. I followed Zack into this back room and Andrew was behind me. "Alright your going to have to get into a gown. You're not that far along so i got to do an interal ultrasound" he said "What does that mean?" Andrew asked. "It means hes going up my vagina" I said. Andrew just gave me and Zack this pissed off but weird look. "I am not going to touch her killer calm down" Zack said to Andrew.

.  
I grabbed the gown went into the bathroom and changed. Came back out and got on the table. Andrew stood up by my head and picked up my hand and squeezed it tight. "Nervous?" I asked "Just a little bit" he said. "Don't be baby" I said as he kissed me. I could feel Zack putting that woond up inside of me and it did feel really weird and uncomfortable. I think Andrew could tell it was making me feel weird because he just kept playing with my hair and holding my hand.

.  
Zack kept looking at the monitor that was in front of him. He hadn't turned it around yet to show just kept making faces and clicking things. "Sooo" Andrew said. "Give me a minute you impatient fucker" he said. Just then we started hearing this thumping noise. I looked up at Andrew as he had tears in his eyes.

.  
"Alright here you go" Zack said turning the monitor around. "That little circle is your kiddo" he said pointing at it. "It's tiny" Andrew said. "Well it's about the size of a walnut maybe little bigger" Zack said. "You are only about 7 weeks along". Just then Andrew got like this pissed off look and started breathing heavy. "I will be right back" Zack said then leaving.

.  
"What's wrong baby?" I asked. "Our baby was made on one of the first nights we were together. If you do the math right" he said. "And those nights well you know" he said sighing. "Or our baby could of been conceived the third night we were together which was the first night we made love to each other" I said smiling at him. He just smiled back at me and said "Yeah I think you are right" he said.

.  
"Of course I am right" I said laughing. He just laughed and kissed me. "So you still think it's a girl by looking at the picture?" I asked "Yes baby" he said "What do you think our baby is then?" He asked. "I am not telling" I smiling at him. He just smiled and kissed me again. Zack came back printed us off a few pictures and we left. We had a little while to go until we could find out the sex of the baby but they always say a woman's intuition is right. So I am going to be right. We decided to have lunch with his sister and tell her we are having a baby this should be fun.

.  
.  
.  
.  
.  
.  
.  
.  
MY MASTER

.  
.  
#31

.  
.  
I woke up in the middle of the night just wide awake. I looked over and saw Andrew just passed out cold. I do got to say since he has changed his face and body does look healthier. More attractive. Maybe it was all of the anger built up in him I don't know. I got up and went to the bathroom and when I came out I decided that I didn't want to lay back down.

.  
I went into the kitchen and made me a cup of coffee. I know I am not supposed to drink coffee that

much being pregnant but one cup isn't going to hurt. I opened the back door that led out to the patio. I just stood there looking out into our back yard sipping the coffee slowly. Every little thing was running through my head. But mostly about our baby.

I never prayed to God before but that night I did for the first time. I never asked God to save me from my father that was something I knew I had to do on my own. But as I stood there looking up at the sky and seeing this one shooting star that's when I decided just to pray in my head. That I didn't want my child to be a part of this. To be born into it rather we not have a boy or girl just not at all.

That my husband would live up to his word and get everything taken care of. That my father would just let us be free and have a family and raise our baby without all of this bullshit. I just closed my eyes and thought about my child. How I have someone that I made inside of me and I want to do anything in my power to protect him or her. As I was just standing there in silence I felt Andrews's hands wrap around my stomach from behind me and kissing my neck. I have gotten so familiar with his hands I can recognize them right away.

"What are you doing my love?" He asked "Just thinking baby" I said "About what?" He asked "Our baby" I said "I hope its good things" he said "Of course baby just want him or her to be here already" I said. "I know how you feel baby" he said kissing my neck again in the same spot that he has been every 10 seconds since he has come outside.

"Come on baby lets go inside its too cold for you to stand out here in your underwear" he said "Yeah I know baby" I said turning around and wrapping my arms around his neck. "I love you baby girl" he said as he wrapped his arms around me. "I love you baby" I said in his ear. He took the coffee cup from my hand and took my hand with his other hand. And we walked in he sat the cup on the bar and we walked down the hallway to our room. "Did we have a little panic baby?" I said as I looked and he I guess when he realized I was gone threw the blankets on the floor.

"Just a tad I didn't know where you were until I started running down the way and past the kitchen and saw you just standing there" he said. "Sorry just needed some fresh air" I said. "Don't be baby" he said as we both climbed into bed. We laid facing each other as he was running his fingers through my hair then to the side of my face. "I hope our daughter has your eyes" he said. "What are you going to do if your wrong about it being a girl" I said. "Love him just the same but its a girl baby" he said laughing. "We shall see" I said as he kissed me one time before going back to sleep

#32 (last insert for the day)



.

We had to meet Zack pretty early for the appointment. But that's alright. I laid in bed as long as I could until Andrew was fully dressed and had sat on the bed next to me. "Come on sweet heart we got to go" he said. "I know I just don't want to get up; I said laughing. "Yeah but its a good reason to get up baby" he said "Yes I know I just feel really blah today" I said "What does blah mean?" He asked

.

"Just achy don't want to move that kind of thing" I said. "Is it bad?" He asked "No not really I am sure all the aches and pains I get are going to be normal; I said "Normal or not you gotta tell me if anything is hurting" he said "I will babe don't worry" I said getting up and getting dressed. I didnt really get dressed. I just went into the closet and put on a hoodie and some yoga pants over my boxers I was wearing and some flip flops. And called it a day.

.

I came out into the living room and he just stared at me "Your going to wear that?" He asked "Yup" I said. "Ok then let's go". "Thats right let's go" I said laughing. He just smiled at me as we walked outside to the car. We both got in and went. It was literally like 10 minutes away. We pulled up and got out he held my hand tight in his as we walked into Zack's office. He was already there bright and early.

.

"You guys ready?" He came out asking us. "Lets do it" I said. I followed Zack into this back room and Andrew was behind me. "Alright your going to have to get into a gown. You're not that far along so i got to do an interal ultrasound" he said "What does that mean?" Andrew asked. "It means hes going up my vagina" I said. Andrew just gave me and Zack this pissed off but weird look. "I am not going to touch her killer calm down" Zack said to Andrew.

.

I grabbed the gown went into the bathroom and changed. Came back out and got on the table. Andrew stood up by my head and picked up my hand and squeezed it tight. "Nervous?" I asked "Just a little bit" he said. "Don't be baby" I said as he kissed me. I could feel Zack putting that woond up inside of me and it did feel really weird and uncomfortable. I think Andrew could tell it was making me feel weird because he just kept playing with my hair and holding my hand.

.

Zack kept looking at the monitor that was in front of him. He hadnt turned it around yet to show just kept making faces and clicking things. "Sooo" Andrew said. "Give me a minute you impatient fucker" he said. Just then we started hearing this thumping noise. I looked up at Andrew as he had tears in his eyes.

.

"Alright here you go" zack said turning the monitor around. "That little circle is your kiddo" he said pointing at it. "Its tiny" Andrew said. "Well its about the size of a walnut maybe little bigger" Zack said. "You are only about 7 weeks along". Just then Andrew got like this pissed off look and started breathing heavy. "I will be right back" Zack said then leaving.

.

"Whats wrong baby?" I asked. "Our baby was made on one of the first nights we were together. If you do the math right" he said. "And those nights well you know" he said sighing. "Or our baby could of been conceived the third night we were together which was the first night we made love to each other" I said smiling at him. He just smiled back at me and said "Yeah I think you are right" he said.

"Of course I am right" I said laughing. He just laughed and kissed me. "So you still think its a girl by looking at the picture?" I asked "Yes baby" he said "What do you think our baby is then?" He asked. "I am not telling" I smiling at him. He just smiled and kissed me again. Zack came back printed us off a few pictures and we left. We had a little while to go until we could find out the sex of the baby but they always say a womans intuition is right. So I am going to be right. We decided to have lunch with his sister and tell her we are having a baby this should be fun.

MY MASTER

#33

Seeing our baby did put a little ease in my mind but not completely. We got in the car and I just started balling like crying hard core crying my eyes out. "Sweetheart why are you crying?" He asked me. "Baby tell me" he said. I just looked at him and said "I guess I knew that we were having a baby but it just hit me baby I am sorry" I said "Its nothing to be upset about baby we are going to bring this life into this world that we made making love to each other." He said kissing my forehead.

"I know baby I couldn't be happier about it I am just scared about whats going on" I said" I know baby I know but I am not going to disappoint you or our baby I will make it happen" he said I just leaned into him and hugged me. I just held me tight and kept saying that he would take care of everything and to trust him. "I love you baby" I said "I love you so much my love" he said kissing me. I pulled away and just looked into his eyes.

He was extremely happy and I knew that having me as his wife and our baby coming did that to him. I honestly just had to have him right then and there. I plunged into him and just kissed him roughly. He looked at me like I was a nut case for wanting him in the car but at the same time didn't care. He put his hands on the side of my face and pushed me backwards into the passenger seat. He reached down and let the seat fall down trying to situate himself in between my legs. He

pulled them to my ankles and leaned up and unzipped his pants and pulled out his cock out and leaned down and kissed me. I felt his cock searching to enter me.

He started biting my neck as he thrusting inside of me. Just thrusting away hard and deeper. I just started moaning loud and screaming because he was hitting the back of my pussy that it was actually feeling really nice. I am not going to lie. I wrapped my arms around him digging my fingers into his back that apparently got him more turned on. He just kept going faster and deeper moaning loudly. "Ahhh baby" he moaned "Yes baby go faster" I yelled. Taking my hands to his hips thrusting down with them as he was thrusting inside of me. "I am going to cum all over you" I moaned. "Do it baby girl cum all over me" he said as I arched my back and ran my hands up to his face pulling his face into mine as I roughly kissed him. Biting his lower lip as I moaned louder and felt myself cum all over him. "I am cumming baby" he moaned as I saw his eyes roll back and he grunted loudly as he came inside of me.

I wrapped my legs more around him as he collapsed on me and kissing me softly. "And what came over you?" He asked "Just wanted you baby" I said "Anything wrong with that?" I asked. "No not at all baby" he smiled at him and kissed me. "You can have sex with me any time any place you want baby girl" he said as pulled himself out of me and tucked his cock back inside of his pants. It was still covered in my cum and wet still hard actually. He rolled over back to the driver side. "Next time let's at least move to the back seat" he said "the dash board is not fun getting hit by my ass" he said laughing. "I am sorry baby" I said laughing. "Oh don't be I still did enjoy it" he said kissing me. "Lets go tell your sister now" I said smiling the subject. "Ok baby" he starting up the car and pulling his sun glasses down over his eyes as we left.

#34(bonus)

We reached this restaurant where we were going to meet her. He got out readjusting his crouch as we got out of the car. I couldn't help but to laugh at him. He just smirked and glared at me. We walked inside holding hands as we saw his sister. She stood up and walking up to us and hugging him first and then me. We sat down she was sitting in front of us. First asking how the married life is going. We haven't seen her really since the day we got married.

"So anything new?" She asked us. I just looked at him as he smiled at me and turned to his sister. "Well sis I well we got some news" he said "Ok" she said "We are going to have a baby" Andrew said. "Your going to what?" She said. "Have a baby" he said "Really?" She got excited. "Wait really oh my god Andrew" she said getting nervous. "What are you going to do?" She asked "What do you mean what am I going to do we are going to have a baby" he said.

"Andrew you have told me about what you do and what you have done. I mean look at her. I get

you love her but Andrew it was one thing you got married but your having a baby now" she said. "Andrew what the fuck are you going to do?" She asked. "I am working on that. I am getting us out it" he said. "Andrew you fucking better. Shes a good person. It was one thing that you touched her and put your hands on her and then fucking falling in love with her and then suddenly marrying her. Which I was totally for you deserve a good wife. But your in that fucking nut of a cult. That the day you got married to her cried your eyes out because you were in love with her. And now your bringing a baby into this shit. If she wasn't having a baby would you still stay in that shit?" She asked.

"I don't know" he said. "What?" I stepped in. "Come on baby I didn't mean that" he said "Really Andrew" I said. "Holy shit you called me Andrew" he said. "Yeah" I said. I couldn't even look at him. Him saying that means he thought about being a part of it while being married to me until I got pregnant. "You better get that shit fixed" she said to him. "I am going to" he said. We ordered our food and they talked to each other while I just zoned out picking at my food. "Are you going to eat?" She asked me. "I am not that hungry" I said Andrew just grunted and sighed. "Can you take me home?" I finally asked him. He just nodded at me as I got up and just went outside leaving him saying goodbye to his sister. I was so pissed I didn't even want to talk to him or be around him at the moment

MY MASTER

#35

We drove home in complete silence. I didn't want to look at him. "Say something baby girl" he said "Why" I said "Because I love you baby" he said. We pulled into the driveway and I got out of the car and went straight inside to the bathroom and shut the door and locked it. He waited a few minutes and started knocking on the door. "Please come out" he said.

I just sighed and let this happen. I would have to come out eventually. I looked at him and he had sad eyes and I know my eyes were pissed off eyes. "Can we talk?" He asked. "Lets go" I said. "Alright. When I met you online yes I just wanted to have you as my slave and have that controlling factor. Like I said before I didn't know you were my love until first night I made love to you." He said "Stop go to the part where you wanted me a part of it as your wife. Until you knocked me up and then changed your mind" I said "that's not what I meant. I said I didn't know because I didn't know what I was going to do having a wife and putting her through all that shit. But when we found out you were pregnant I knew I had to get out more than ever. Had to get our baby too" he said.

"I never wanted you to be apart of it as my wife. Don't you think I want a normal life too. Without my wife having a hit out on her" he said "What did you just say?" I said he looked like he had just slipped up and said something he wasn't supposed to. "I have a fucking hit out on me" I yelled. "Yes and no" he said "Your father wants you out of the picture. He thinks having you as my wife is the reason why I want to get away. Yes Zack mentioned to him that I want out. And your father said it would just be easier to take you out. Zack didn't know if he was joking or not. But I am not taking that risk. That's why I am having dinner with your father tomorrow alone." He said

"And when were you going to tell me this 5 minutes before you left" I said "No I was going to tell you tonight. Because today was going really well. Seeing our baby made my day. And now its kinda shattering because I am arguing with my wife something I never want to do" he said. "Fucking fix it thats all I got to say" taking his hand and putting it on my stomach. "Especially for him" I said. "Him?" He asked me "Yes I think well I know its a boy. He doesn't need in this shit." I said.

"Really you think its a boy" he said "Yes I already dreamed about him. And hearing him today confirmed it" I said "Thats the one thing that stuck out of what my mom told me about being pregnant you will know the first time you hear the heart beat and I instantly knew" I said. "I have always wanted a son" he said "Then be a good father to him and get us out of it before he comes out" I said. I turned and walked to the bed stripping my clothes off as I went. Eventually getting back into my boxers and tank top. Crawling up into bed and just cried. He sat down next to me and watched me. "I promise baby" he said "Just do it baby just do it" I said. I leaned up and just hugged him still crying. "Just do it" I kept repeating myself. "Thank you for calling me baby again." He said as we just held on to each other

.

We ended up just laying in bed all night together. I am hoping he didnt really mean what he said that he just didnt know if he wanted me as a wife in that cult shit hole he is in, but i have no choice really to believe him. i do love the man. Yes at first I didnt and I was scared for my life and would do anything and everything he said. But I guess when you do meet your true love the better part of you comes out and it really did in him in that short time frame.

It was the next morning and I had already woken up started the coffee and come back into the bedroom. He was still asleep so I just laid up in bed and watched him. I have never really watched any one sleep before. Like really watch them sleep. You could tell he was dreaming something really good because he kept smiling in his sleep and just had this nice looking glow on him. He eventually opened his eyes and just looked at me. He sighed deeply and just smiled again.

"Good morning baby" he said

"Good morning" I said.

"How long have you been awake?" he asked

"Awhile" I said

"Couldn't sleep?" he asked being concerned

"Something like that" I said

"Sorry baby" he said

"Don't be nothing you can do about it. it just happens." I said

"Do you know why you couldn't sleep?" he asked

"My body is hurting baby its hard to get comfortable" I said

"Oh" he said

"Nothing I can do to help?" he asked

"Nah not really just something I got to get used to I guess" I said

"Yeah" he said

He leaned in and kissed me.

"I am sorry we had a rough night baby" he said

"It happens" I said

"No couple is perfect" I continued

"Yeah but we are. I don't like us fighting its something I just don't like" he said

"We just shouldn't fight baby over something that is fixable" he said

"I know its fixable baby I just want it over and done with already. I hate worrying and stressing over something that I cant really control and you cant really either" I said

"Yeah but you have to baby anything and everything you feel so does our baby and we dont need to that kind of worry and stress on the baby" he said

"I know baby" I sighed

"I still promise you that everything is going to work out and everything is going to be ok" he said

"I believe you baby. I guess its just the horomones going crazy" I laughed

"I guess so" he laughed

"Plus either way I am going to worry that is something your going to have to except" I just laughed

"Yes I know you are my stubborn wife. I have picked up on that trait of yours" he laughed

"Yeah I cant help that" I said

"I think its sexy" he said smiling at me

"I am glad you do then" I said.

We went and got out of bed and took a shower together. He suggested that we go see his sister again. I do want to apologize to her for acting the way I did. And I think that Andrew wanted to talk to her some more too and really give her an explanation about everything. She does know what he was apart of. She was the only one that he talks to in his family and she told him everything and anything he did. Before and after he met me.

I know that she is happy he found someone and happy that we are having a baby. But i know that she is worried about the baby.

We drove down to her shop and walked in. She had this surprised look on her face which I am guessing he didn't tell her that we were coming by. Oh well. She hugged us and walked us back to her office so we could talk. He closed the door behind us as we all sat down.

"I am going to start" I said

"I want to apologize for the way I acted yesterday. It was supposed to be a great exciting news and it turned into a big blow over" I said

"Dont blame yourself" she said

"I blame Andrew" she laughed

"No I really do seriously Andrew. I am your big sister and I know what kind of a mess you are in and I think that it is fucked up that one you would actually put yourself into that mess when you got back. And did things to girls that I cant even imagine you doing in the first place. And then meet someone you fall in love with, which I am happy for you I really am. And then bring her into it. I get that you are trying to get out. And I hope that you work things out so that you cant take your wife and baby out of it. You are a great guy Andrew I helped pretty much raise you and you were not raised to be a man like that. I know mom and dad got divorced when you were a teenager and that but a big demper on you. And then mom wont talk to you any more. which is fucked up to begin with. But I knew your ex fucked you over pretty good too and then you went off the deep end. You really did. And hearing what kind of a person you had become and what you were doing really broke my heart it did. And then when you called me one night and you were just happy. I havent heard you that happy in a long time that it made me happy. I knew that you had found the one that was made for you. And I was thrilled. When I meet her for the first time I could tell why you had fallen in love with her"

"I'm going to fix this I promise" he took my hand and left a gentle kiss

.  
.  
.

MY MASTER

.  
.

#36

.

.Andrew had this heart broken look on his face. He knew that he had broken the heart of someone that was always there for him.

"I am really sorry and I know that I have fucked up in the past and I am making up for it. If I got her the love of my life to forgive me and trust me I know you can too." he said

"Let me ask you something?" she said looking at me

"Did you forgive him because you were scared of him?"

"No" I shook my head

"Yes I was scared of him at first but baby.." I said looking at him

"This is when I realized I loved you and meant saying it. Rather or not I knew it and I know you said you knew I loved you before I knew I did. But the first night that I ran into my father he took up

for me and trusted me and comforted me. The only people that knew my father was people in that group. And Andrew knew what kind of a person he was and he didnt want me to be around it. I told him I loved him that night and hugged on to him tight and I knew in my heart that I actually did love him and I meant it when I said it" I said

"Thats good" she said

"I am happy for you both I really am. You both deserve each other I just really hope you get out of it Andrew I really do" She said

"I am going to sis. I swear I am" he said looking at her straight in the eyes.

"I believe you because I know when you lie" she laughed

He just laughed.

We ended up having a nice talk with her. I can see why Andrew loves his sister and didnt want to disappoint her any more. We ended up spending the whole day with her. Until she decided to go home and Andrew wanted to get back to the house and get ready for his dinner date with my father. I got back into my pajamas because to be honest I didnt really feel like dressing up any more and just wanted to be in clothes that made me comfortable. I just watched him get ready. I knew this was going to be an interesting night to say the lest.

"Did you just up and call my father out of the blue and asked him to have dinner with you?" I asked

"Yup pretty much" he said

"I am surprised he agreed to it" I said

"You and me both but its something I got to do. Its one step closer" He said coming out of the bathroom all dressed up. Actually had a suit and tie on and really fucking hot.

"What do you think?" he asked

"If you didnt have to be some where I would take you right now" I smiled

"We can always do it when I get back" he said smiling and coming up and kissing me shoving his tongue into my mouth.

"MmHm" I said

"Then its a date" he said

"I guess I better go" he sighed

"Alright baby" I said

"I dont know how long its going to take but I will be back when I get back baby" he said

'Its alright baby I will be here waiting" I laughed

"You better be" he laughed kissing me again

"Where else would I go?" I joked

"I dont know I just dont want to have the thought of you not being here when I get back" he said all serious.

"I know baby" I said

He leaned in and kissed me again. Like a really love deep passionate kiss that makes your knees



really weak and just want to fall onto the floor.

"Ahhh I love kissing you" he said

I just smiled at him and leaned in and kissed him again.

"I cant be late sweetie" he said

"I know baby" I said

"We will pick up where we left off when I get back" he said kissing me again

"Sounds good to me baby" I said

"I love you baby girl" he said

"I love you baby" i said as he kissed me one last time as I walked him to the garage door so he could leave.

"If you go to bed dont forget to lock up and alarm it" he said

"I wont baby" I said

He smiled and blew me a kiss as he got into the car and opened the garage door and left.

I am really anxious and nervous about what is going to happen. Its going to be a waiting and long fucking night that is for sure.

.  
.

I waited around for what seemed like hours and hours. Which it really was. He had already been gone 3 hours and I had decided just to do some small things to pass the time. I did a load of laundry. Cleaned the kitchen. Even took a bubble bath. I was laying in the bathtub when I heard the garage door open. He was finally home. I just laid there I was enjoying this bath so much that I didnt want to move. He would eventually find me I kind of laughed in my head.

I heard him walk into our bedroom and then opened the bathroom door.

"Hi baby" I said sighing

"Hi my love are you comfortable?" he asked

"You have no idea" I said

We had this really big garden tub that was amazing especially when you turned the jets on. He just smiled at me and started stripping his clothes off.

"Do you want some company?" he said standing there naked in front of me

"Yessss" I said

He climbed in the bathtub and situated himself in front of me. I had to pull my legs up for him to lay down and then I laid them back down over his when he sat down in the tub.

"You seem happy?" I said

"Yeah a little bit" he said

"So are you going to bet around the bush or you going to tell me what happened?" I said

He just smiled and said:

"Well alright when I got there he did confront me about being a dick head to him the other night. And I explained to him that I had a lot of my plate right now and it just came out. He excepted that and then started asking me if some of the things were true. He said he already knew that we got married and that part he didnt have a problem with. Then he asked if you were really pregnant and I said yes. He asked me if I was going to upstand and do all the set rules we have and obey them.

I told him that I couldnt do that to my family.

.  
That I love my wife and I love my child even though the baby isnt here yet I cant do it. Then he asked me well does that mean you are trying to find a way out. And I just gave him a serious dead look and said yes. He started to at first saying that once you are in it for life you are in it for life. And then I kind of snapped back at him and said others had left and I knew that they have. He just starred directly at me and said its a bigger mess to get out of then it is to actually get it. I told him that I would do anything and everything in my power to do it. He was kind of being a ass about it but eventually told me that it was his decision on who gets to join and who gets to leave. That it was Leons.

.  
I told him that I understood that part and told him that I was told that I had to talk to you first because technically my wife is your daughter. Then he started making a smart ass comment about how he didnt have a daughter he had a fucking slave and all of this shit. I was starting to get pissed but I knew I had to hold my tongue, which when this shit is all over and done with I will be letting your father have it for everything he has said and done. Then he said that I would have to talk to Leon and set up a meeting about leaving. That we had another get together in 2 weeks and that I needed to be there. And that you did too. And yes I am sorry baby but this is the event I told you I was going to warn you about. That I had to play the asshole husband and treat you like shit in front of everyone. And I have to do it to prove to them that I was being serious about everything. Which I am." he said

"So let me get this straight my father one was being a little nice thats fucking shocking and two we have to go to a party and me get treated like shit while I am there. Fucking score" I said

"I know baby but we have to do it in order to make this happen" he said

"I promise I wont hit you or anything like that but I am going to have to call you my slave and treat you like shit while we are there" he said sadly

"Good fucking times I cant wait" I said

"I know baby I know" he said leaning forward and kissing me.

.  
I wasnt looking forward to that night at all. Not for that face that I will be treated like shit but the simple fact other Masters will be doing it me as well. I just hope I dont have to do anything I am forced to do. Andrew wouldnt let that happen to me right? I seriously hope not.

We got out of the bathtub dried off and went into the bed room. I didnt even put any clothes on and either did he. We just started going at it right by the bedpost. He leaned in and kissed me really softly and nice. Tonight I guess he wanted to take things slowly and not fast and hard. Which I was really fine with. I loved him and loved making love to him.

I crawled up backwards on to the bed as he followed me. He laid me down on the bed and started kissing my neck softly making little circles with his tongue, while caressing my nipples. He was really a gentle lover and I loved it. He started working down my neck and then my ears he whispered " Its all about you tonight baby" as he kissed my neck again and moved down. He was

reaching my boobs and sucking on one and playing with the other with his hand. He would switch back and forth so each one got the equal amount of attention from him. He went down to my stomach and kissed around my belly button and then to my thighs. He went down on kissing in down and into the inner part. And then to the other thigh and kissing it running his tongue up and down it. He reached the top of my pussy and started kissing it slowly and softly. While running his fingers around my lips. Feeling how wet I was getting. He slowly stuck a finger inside of me as he started licking my clit. I was getting more and more wet and turned on. He stuck another finger in as he sucked on my clit harder and little faster. He started moving his fingers in and out of my wet pussy faster that I could hear the smacking of his fingers against my wetness. I started moaning and arching my back as he was going faster. "Cum for me baby" he moaned. I was close as he started fingers my pussy faster and sucking on my clit harder. He pulled his fingers out as I was moaning louder. He put his tongue right inside my pussy and was running his tongue inside my pussy. I started moaning deeper gripping my fingers into the sheets and just letting it out. "OHHHH god baby" I screamed as I felt my orgasum over power me and as I let it all out on his face. He licked my pussy getting all of my cum off it. He climbed back on top of me and started kissing me again. I could taste my cum as he was putting his tonuge in my mouth letting our tonuges just go at it. I could feel his cock moving around in between my pussy lips as it was looking to go inside. He thrust deep and slowly. Letting out a grunt as he hit the back of my pussy wall with his dick. "Ahhhhh" I moaned as he started going slowly at first just letting my pussy tighten around his cock as he was going in and out of me. He was still kissing me slowly as he started going faster. It felt so good that I didnt want it to stop. He was moaning inside my ear as I knew that my tight pussy was going to make him cum. I wrapped my legs around him pulling him closer into me as he cock went a little deeper. "Faster baby" I moaned as he started nibbling on my neck and doing faster. I could feel my pussy contract tighter as I knew I was about to cum again. I started scratching his back as he knew I was on the edge of cumming. He looked at my straight in the eyes and grabbed the top of the head board and just started going at it. I felt his cock twitching inside of me as it wanted to cum. "I am cumming baby" I moaned "Cum for me baby girl" he moaned back as I rolled my eyes back into my head and just moaned out "AHHHHHH AHHH" and cumming all over him. He was still throbing inside of me as he kept going faster. He was moaning louder and grunting and that I knew he was about to cum. I wrapped my legs tight around him again taking my hands and pulling his face into mine. I kissed him really softly and said "I love you baby" "I love you baby girl" he said kissing me again and as soon as our tongues met he grunted and came inside of me.

"That was amazing baby" he said kissing me

"Yes it was" I smiled at him

He rolled over and just laid there his cock was still hard but it was covered in a mixture of both of our cums.

"You know what would be awesome" I said

"Whats that baby?" he asked

"If we went and got some ice cream" I said smiling

He just busted out laughing.

"After a great round of sex you want ice creaming" he said

"I think the baby wants it more than I do" I said

"I believe you are right" he said as he rolled up and walked to the closet and put on a pair of pajama pants and a white t-shirt. I went and grabbed a pair of boxers and tank top and put my flip flops on. He walked up behind me and hugged me tight.

"I love you baby girl" he said

"I love you sweetie" I said as he kissed the back of my neck

"Now lets go before our kids get mad" I said

"Yeah I guess I better get used to these late night cravings" he said

"Yeah I would" I said laughing

As we both walked out to the car and went to the store.

.  
.  
.

.MY MASTER

.  
.

#37

.  
.

.Before I knew it those two weeks had been up and it was the night of that party. I was so scared and nervous and could tell he was too. Andrew hadn't treated me like that in a long time and I was about to put myself back into that and I don't know if I could. My hormones had started going crazy and I am sure they were going to go full force tonight. I had already gotten ready and I was waiting on him in the living room. I had chosen to wear a simple pink dress it was spaghetti straps and a little longer than the others I had worn.

.

I put my hair back into a bun and looked alright I guess. He walked out of the bedroom wearing jeans and a collared shirt. He looked like he just wanted to smack anyone and everyone in the face. I stood up and stood in front of him. He looked at me and just sighed. "I am going to apologize in advance" he said "is anyone else going to put their hands on me" I asked. "They shouldn't I won't let them if they tried" he said. "Ok baby" I said "I can't believe I am fucking doing this" he said. "I can't believe you are either" I said and looking down at the floor.

.

"Come on baby lets go" he said. We both got in the car and drove over there. We went to Leon's house and every party Leon had you had to obey the set rules even if you were married. Which he only hosts 2-3 parties a year. We drove up and parked. Andrew just sat there with his head in steering wheel. "Lets just get it over with" I said. "But I don't want to do that to you. You have no idea how badly it's hurting me right now" he said. "Oh I do because I am going to get it too" I said. "Come on lets just fucking go" I said getting out of the car I was just wanting to get this shit over and done. He got out as well.

.

We didn't hold hands this time. We got about half way to the door and he turned to me and said "I love you and I am sorry baby girl" I just said "I love you". He grabbed my arm and just started walking faster with me. He was being rough about it and I knew he had to. We got to the door and walked in. I was being a little slow about it and I heard another man that was behind us yell at Andrew "Get your fucking slaves ass to go faster". Andrew just sighed and turned around and yelled at me "You fucking heard the man move it slave" him calling me that sent chills down my spine. As I was yanked by the arm harder by him.

.

He pulled me into the living room where it was packed with people. Mostly older guys with young women. Some had chains around their neck was being pulled around by their master. I could hear them yelling and cussing at them. I could hear screaming coming from up stairs by several different women. I just wanted this night to be over with. Andrew grabbed my arm again and we walked a little further to where there was a few couches. There was a slave giving a master a blow job in front of everyone. I was praying I didn't have to do anything like that. I could take being talked to like that but not being humiliated like she was.

.

"Oh nice slave" I heard someone behind me start grabbing my ass then running their fingers up and down it. I just paused as he did that making Andrew turn around and look at me. His eyes were about to bulge out of his face when he saw the guy behind me. "Are you going to let me play with your slave Mr Jules?" He asked Andrew. I looked down at the floor waiting for him to say something. "Whats in it for me?" Andrew asked.

.

What the fuck did he just say that I said to myself. "I will pay you a little something I have had my eyes on your slave since the first time I saw her" he said. "What was your plans?" Andrew asked. "I just wanted to touch her a little more" he guy said. "I don't know man she is a slave but I like to keep her to myself if you know what I mean" Andrew said. "I think you should just at least let the man kiss her and let his hands explore her" my father jumped in .

.

Shit now Andrew doesn't have a choice he can't say no to my father. Andrew just sighed and said "No sex. You got 3 minutes" he said pushing me backwards into the mans arms. I looked up at him and just shook my head at him. He couldn't even look at me in the face. He just closed his eyes and turned his head away. He had promised me he wouldn't let no one touch me. "I fucking hate you master" I yelled at him. The guy that had me smacked me for talking to him that way and saying we don't talk to our masters that way.

.

Andrew looked up at me and I mouthed it again that way he was looking into my eyes as I told him. He guy grabbed my arm and walked me down this hallway into a bedroom. He opened up as I started tearing up. He turned me around and roughly shoved his tongue into my mouth kissing me. He tasted like stale cigarettes and beer. He started running his hands up my body and to the front of my breasts. He started pulling on them really hard. They were already starting to get sore

and him doing that didn't help much.

.  
He yanked down the top of my dress as I didn't wear a bra so my boobs were out in the open. He squatted down and started kissing on them biting really hard on them. He came back up and roughly started kissing me again. He started pulling up my dress and trying to shove his hand up there before his time was up. "Damn slave you are fucking wet" he said. There's no way I was wet this was not turning me on at all. He fingered me for a few seconds and pulled his hand out pulling down my dress and kissing me one more time. I looked up as he was bringing his hands up close to me as I just screamed. "What the fuck are you screaming for slave?" He asked.

.  
I just pointed at his fingers they had blood on them. "Holy shit...and..your pregnant..Andrew is going to kill me...I am so sorry" he said. "I didn't mean to" he said backing away. "Just go get him" I yelled. The guy opened the door and bolted out of the room. I stuck my hand under my dress and felt it. There was alot of it. I pulled my hand out and saw it. It was dark and just running down my fingers. I could feel it start running down my legs. As I could hear running coming up the hallway. I looked up and saw Andrew.

.  
He saw my hand and just grabbed my hand. " lets go" he said "We got to take you to a hospital I have no idea where the fuck Zack is" he said. As I just let him pull me out of that house and to the car. He opened the passenger door for me and I got in. He opened the trunk got something out in the driver side. "Here baby" he said handing me this blanket. He started the car and slammed it into reverse and we spud out of there really fast. I wrapped the blanket around my legs. Sitting up a little bit and putting it under me as well.

.  
I looked over at him and he had tears going down his face. "And why are you crying?" I asked "Lets see I just let a man touch my wife. Which I shouldn't of. She tells me she fucking hates me. And my child thinks it would be a great idea to scare the fuck out his dad" he said. "Oh ok" I said. "Do you really hate me baby" he asked. "Right now yes a little" I said. "You promised you wouldn't let no one touch me" I said "I know I know baby" he said. "You know how awful that was" I said. "No I am going to fucking tell you. Having another man kiss you. Kiss your breasts then trying to finger you only to find blood on his hands then freaking the fuck out himself" I said.

.  
"You know what lets just fucking drop it for now. I am bleeding and I am not supposed to be" I said. He tried to pick up my hand and bring it up to his lips and kiss. But I jerked my hand away and wouldn't let him. I looked at him and he was balling like a little kid. "I don't hate you I just wish you would handled that better" I said. "Yeah. Can we talk about this later and go see if our baby is ok" he said as we pulled up into the emergency room parking lot. "Yeah" I said getting out wrapping the towel around me as we walked in. He wrapped his arm around me pulling me into him and holding me tight. At that moment I don't think neither one of cared about what happened or didn't happen. We just wanted to make sure or baby was ok.

.

.  
.  
.  
MY MASTER  
.  
.

#38  
.

I laid in the hospital bed just staring at the ceiling. Andrew was sitting in the chair that was in the room. Neither one of us were talking to each other. I could feel tears going down my face because I didn't know what was going on. I just opened my hand out and laid it out over the side of the railing. Andrew picked it up and kissed it. I looked over at him I wasn't the only one that was crying. He stood up and walked up to me and just wrapped him self around me as I wrapped my arms around his neck.

.  
We both just held each other. We both needed it. Worrying about our baby was the only thing on our minds right now. We both could of given two shits about anything else. He pulled away and looked into my eyes. "Just tell me our baby is ok" he said. "I wish I could baby" I said as he knew I couldn't promise that because I didn't know myself. Neither one of us knew. I had already been seen by the emergency room doctor they were waiting on someone to get an ultrasound machine so they could check on the baby. My heart was racing so bad that I could hear it pounding in my bed.

.  
"Try to calm down baby I know its hard but you have to for the baby you have to" he said softly in my ear. I just closed my eyes and controlled my breathing the best that I could. I really did try but it was hard. He kissed my forehead as I still laid there trying to breathe slowly until there was a knock at the door and entered two doctors and a nurse. "Alright Mrs Jules lets see whats going on" one said as he pulled a chair in front of my legs and sat down. Examining me. It was very uncomfortable to say the least that I had another man examining my vagina like that.

.  
"Well you have stopped bleeding thats a good thing" he said. I felt the wond go inside of me as I started breathing heavy again. Not hearing any voice coming from the monitor which was scaring me even more. I gripped Andrew hand tight as he was mine. We were both thinking the same thing. That the worst had happened. Both of the doctors kept starring at the machine with a concerned look on their face. Kept pointing at different things. "So whats going on?" Andrew finally asked.

.  
Then suddenly we both heard it. He moved the wond in a different position and we just started hearing this thumping noise. It was like heaven to our ears the most beautiful sound anyone could ever hear. Andrew just loosen his grip a little bit as I heard him sigh. My heart wasn't racing as bad as it was but still wasn't in the clear about how our baby was doing. "Already guys" he finally said.

"You almost lost your baby I am not going to lie. You are under a great amount of stress your blood pressure and heart rate are showing it. Your baby is way too young to handle that and luckily is a strong kid and held on. You have to calm yourself or I am sorry you will end up having a miscarriage." He said "The rest of your first trimester you have to take it to the best your going to be on bed rest this early" he said.

"During your second trimester if things are better than we can talk about letting you do limited things but for now its a no go" he said. "Its all about your baby right now" he said. "Ok" I said. "So for sure the next 4 weeks its bed and rest" he said. "I am going to give you a shot to help calm down and to help you not start contracting. The reason you have been feeling achy is because you were in the beginning of it. Your baby is very lucky" he said. They left the room so I could get dressed. Andrew had some extra clothes in the car that he went and got that I changed into because I didn't want to put that dress back on.

We left knowing all the stress and worrying about everything from the both of us had put a huge effect on our baby. And we didn't want anything else to happen. On the drive home he held my hand and kept kissing it over and over. We got home and he carried me inside laying me in bed. He changed into his pajamas and climbed into bed next to me. "I am so sorry this is all my fault" he said. "Don't even say its yours too because its not baby our baby almost didn't make it because of me. What kind of father am I to even do that to my child" he said. "I love you so much baby girl and I don't want nothing to happen to you or our baby" he said. "I love you so very much baby" I said putting my hand on the side of his face. "We just have to think of our baby right now and nothing else" I said. He leaned in and kissed me. He then leaned down and kissed my stomach "Daddy is so sorry" he said

The next morning I woke up to Andrew sitting up next to me just staring at me. He had very sad eyes looked like he had been awake all night. Probably didn't get any sleep. "Hi" I said softly. Looking directly into his eyes. "Good morning my love" he said. "Have you been to bed yet?" I asked. "No" he said. "You can't go without sleep baby" I said.

"Got a lot of things on my mind baby"

"Tell me baby"

"I don't want to worry you baby girl"

"Your going to anyway if you don't tell me"

"Ok well I messed up and almost lost our baby last night. And I have to fix it. And I know going to fix it will put stress on you and if I don't go fix it it will put stress on you so I don't know what to do baby I really don't"

"Baby we need out of this. And you promised me you would for me for our baby for us. We need to be a family with out all of this."

"But its going to make us stress and worry and you don't need that" he said. "Sweetie..." I said sitting up next to him putting my hand on the side of his face. "We have to baby you have to baby I



will have to control my stress and feelings about it and just keep calm. But we have no other choice at the moment. You have to get us out of this baby I don't want our son in this." I said as I started to cry.

He whipped my tears away and put his forehead against mine. "Are you sure?" He asked "Yes get us away from it out of it whatever you got to do" I said. "I will I just don't want nothing to happen to our baby" he said. "Nothing will baby I will make sure of it. I will protect our baby if you get it done" I said. "I will baby but I still think its a girl" he laughed. " No its a boy" I laughed. "We will just have to argue to disagree until SHE comes out" he smiled at me. "Yeah when HE does" I said. He just smiled at me and kissed me really softly.

"Are you feeling ok though baby girl?" He asked. "Yes much better baby. I love you" I said "I love you so much baby girl. I already took another week off work so I can be with you and take care of you" he said. "You have to go back eventually babe" I said "I know but they understand you are more important than work baby" he said. I just smiled at him. As he just hugged me. I knew that he would fix everything. But who knows what he would have to do or what I would have to do. The main thing is our baby right now and we have 2 weeks until the next event to relax and try to live a stress free life but I don't know if that will work. I know his mind is racing wondering the what ifs. And neither one of us want nothing to happen to our baby but I still don't want our baby born in any of this

MY MASTER

#39

For the past week I got to say everything went pretty good. It was very relaxing Andrew wouldn't let me get out of bed which I understand why. He has become very protective and loving and I got to say I am really enjoying it. It was Monday morning and he was getting ready to go back to work. He had this look like he didn't want to leave me but we both knew had to go back to work. "I don't want to go baby girl I just have a feeling not to leave you today" he said. "I am going to fine baby I promise I am not going to get out of bed" I said.

"Remember I am not allowed to" I said laughing. "I know but just something not feeling right" he said. "Baby go to work I will be fine" I said "Ok baby" he said coming up to me and kissing me. "Just keep in touch with me baby" he said "I will sweet heart" I said. "I love you baby girl" he said "I love you" I said as he kissed me one last time and left. I heard him go out the garage door and leave. I do got to say it was pretty boring laying in bed all day especially without him being here. It

was close to noon and I heard my phone ringing and I could only guess who it was.

"Hello sexy baby" I said answering it. "Hello my love" he said. "You seem like you are feeling better today" he said. "Why yes I am" I said. "Thats good" he said. "I miss you baby" he said "I miss you more" I said. "Nope not possible baby not possible" he said. "You better believe it" I said. "Hey I got a surprise for you" he said "Oh really" I said as I heard the garage door open. "Let me guess you are home already" I said smiling. "No baby but I wish I have some things I got to catch up here" he said "Then how come I heard the garage door open your not being that sneaky" I said.

"Umm baby I am not home thats not me" he said "Are you joking baby?" I asked. "Baby I swear I am not there did you really hear it open" he asked "Yes I did" I said "Baby its not me go hide go now" he demanded. But before I could run out of the room I was greeted by someone in the hallway. I screamed as I could hear Andrew yelling through the phone as this guy grabbed me. "Baby baby I am on my way what happened?" I kept hearing him. I just kept screaming as I was struggling with this guy. He kept hitting me and trying to pick me up and drag me. "Andrew help me!" I yelled as he punched me in the face and I remember dropping my phone and being dragged away. I kept hearing "Baby answer me fucking answer me" as I was carried away.

?

woke up laying in the back seat of a car. My face was pounding but my stomach was hurting more. I sat up to a guy sitting next to me. I looked at him in disgust as he said "Some one wants to talk to you" he said "Let me guess my father" I said. "Yes" he said. "He could of just fucking called" I said. We drove into my old neighborhood I started recognizing it right away. I didn't want to be back here. To the place I grew up. The terrible nightmares were starting to flash back. We pulled up into the driveway as the guy stepped out grabbing my arm and jerking me out with him.

He pushed me forward telling me to start walking. I knew exactly where we were going to my fathers office. I walked inside and directly to his office opening the door and just walking in without even knocking which that was something he hated but I didn't give a shit. "Well well" you have arrived he said sitting back in his chair. "What do you want?" I asked. "You don't fucking talk to your father that way in my house" he yelled standing up. "Talk to me like the way I fucking raised you" he said slapping my face.

I just sighed because I didn't want to get smacked again. "Sir what can I do for you?" I asked. "Better that fucking husband of yours has made you soft" he said. I just stood there waiting for his next move. I was hoping Andrew would bust threw the door but he has no idea where my father lives and I never did tell him. "I hear your husband wants to quit he said "Yes sir he does" I said. "I think its all because of your ass slave because he was one of my best guys until he met your stupid ass" he said.

"Well anyway your husband has quite a few things to do before that happens and one of them is

someone else gets to fuck your brains out while he watches...thats something I added because I know damn well hes not going to let it happen" he said. I just closed my eyes and couldn't even soak in what he was telling me. "So your going with my friend over here and its going to get video taped and your husband gets to watch it later what do you think about that?"he asked. I just sighed and bite my tongue and said "Ok sir".

"Great glad you fucking agreed" he said pushing me into the guys arms as he dragged me away and out of my father's office. He walked me into another room and pushed me into it. "Go strip and lay down slave and wait some one will be in here shortly" he said. The door slammed in my face before I could say anything. I walked in front of this mirror that was hanging on the wall. I couldn't believe what was happening. I closed my eyes and took off my shirt started to cry as I slide down my pants and panties. I forced myself to walk over to the bed. I didn't lay down I just sat up in a ball holding my knees up to my chest and cried harder.

I looked up as I heard the door open to an older man I knew who he was I remember seeing him around my father's house growing up. He walked in carrying a video camera and walked over and sat it on the dresser. He started taking all of his clothes off. I could tell well just had a feeling he was going to be rough with me. He only had his pants on when he walked over to me. He undid them dropping them to the ground. He slide down his underwear.

"Look at it slave you do this fucking to me every time I see you. I have been wanting to fuck that pussy since you were 15" he said. He brushed his hand on the side of my face. "Dont be scared I wont tear your pussy up that bad" he said laughing. I just closed my eyes as he laid me backwards. He climbed on top of me spreading my legs open. He started kissing and biting the side of my neck. "Ahh shit I forgot a condom. Even though your pregnant I don't want my sperm inside of you. Plus who knows where the fuck you have been" he said getting up just putting his underwear back on. I laid there as he left.

I started hearing something vibrate on the floor. I looked through his pants and it was a phone. I quickly dialed Andrews number. He didn't answer went to voicemail I redialed. "What" he answered. "Baby its me" I said "Baby where are you?" He asked. "My fathers 5440 st hurry and get here I am about to get raped its a punishment from my father to you" I said. I heard the car squal as he was I guess making a turn.

"Its going to take me about 10 minutes baby. Try to stall them I will get there I promise don't let anyone do anything to you" he said.

"I will try baby I am already naked he stepped out but should be back any minute" I said.

"Shit Hang up the phone baby girl I don't want you caught talking to me" he said.

.  
"Ok baby" I said "I love you I will get to you" he said. "I love you. Hurry baby" I said hanging up the phone and shoving it back into his pants pocket. It was a few minutes before the guy came back. He came in laughing. "Sorry slave it took so long but apparently fucking your boss's daughter makes you a legend" he said. "Great" I said. "Now where we" he said. Climbing back on top of me sliding his underwear back down. He slide the condom over himself.

.  
Then pushing my hands back down over my head. Using his knees to push my legs apart and get in between me. I could feel himself pressed up against me. He was going to get inside of me before Andrew would even get here. I couldn't get away from him I tried he was way stronger to the point I was pinned down and couldn't move. He bite the side of my neck as he pushed the head of his cock up against my pussy hole. "Take my cock you fucking bitch" as he rammed it inside. I screamed out in pain as he did it. He pulled it back out of me.

.  
"You like my dick don't you bitch" he said. I didn't answer him. "You are going to fucking answer me" he said smacking me across the face. "Do you like my cock you slave?" He yelled. "Yes Master I do" I said sadly I couldn't even look at him when I said it. "Good girl slave" he said pushing himself up against me again kissing the side of my neck while taking one hand and tying my hands to the bed post. He went down and started kissing on my nipples and biting them really hard. I screamed again as it really did hurt.

.  
He sat up in his knees and started stroking his cock. "You like my dick slave is it bigger than your husband's" he said. "Yes Master it is" I said. Which it really wasn't. "I know you have always wanted me I could tell every time I saw you" he said. As he kept stroking his dick in front of me as his eyes were rolling back in his head. "I have decided first I am going to make you suck me off bitch" he said pulling off the condom and moving his dick to my face. He kept stroking it as it was twitching. "Open up whore" he said. I just closed my eyes I he forced my mouth open with his hand. "Take it for master" he said as it was coming closer to me. I thought about just biting it as soon as it came into my mouth but I knew I would get deeply punished for it. "Get the fuck off my wife" I heard a voice and a little relieved at the same time.

.  
I felt him get clubhouse off me. "Baby did he touch you" he asked. "Yes" I said as Andrew was just pounding away at him. "Did he put himself in side of you?" He yelled. I didn't want to say it but I didn't want to lie to him. "Yes" I said. "You fucking asshole shes my wife and if you fucking bastards want to play by these rules then you cant fuck my wife without my permission" he yelled just hitting him over and over. "Mr. Jules get off of him" my father said coming into the room.

.  
"Don't fucking start this is not part of the rules and you know it" he yelled at my father. "That is my god damn wife you don't fucking touch her" he yelled at him. My father just stood there. Andrew turned to me he was beyond pissed that his face was red and had no expression on his face. He untied me and picked me up. "Don't contact me any more I will be contacting Leon myself. I will

take it from here I don't need your fucking help" he yelled at my dad. I wrapped my arms and legs around him as he held me I honestly didn't care about my clothes.

I looked down at that guy and I think Andrew actually killed him. I think he actually did kill him. Andrew carried me out to the car sat me into the front seat. Put my seat belt on for me. Pulled the blanket out of the carseat and laid it over me. He slammed the car door and walked around to driver side and got in. Started the car and headed home. "How long was he inside of you?" He asked. "I don't want to talk about it" I said crying. "Baby tell me" he said "He just pushed it in and pulled it out" I said. "Ok" he said. "I think you killed him anyway" I said.

"I did baby" he said. "What?" I said "Yeah I snapped his neck hes dead" he said. "No one does that to my wife and gets away with it" he said. "You know killing him probably just made it worse" I said. "I don't give a shit baby no one has sex with you but me and if they try get the fuck away with it" he said. Just to calm him down some I picked up his hand and held it to my cheek. "Thank you for coming" I said. "Anything for you baby. I told you you are my everything and that will never change I will kill for you and risk my own life to save yours" he said.

"I love you" I said "I love you more" he said. "I love you the most" I said. He just busted out laughing. "Did I win this one?" I said "Not a chance baby girl" he said laughing as we pulled up into the driveway to our house. As he leaned over and kissed me. "Now lets get your sexy self inside" he said. As he got out of the car walked around opened the door and picked me up and carried me inside. I could still hear his heart racing as killing that guy made things worse than what they already

MY MASTER

#40

It had been 2 weeks since the incident happened. Andrew didn't want to leave me alone at the house any more and I can't say I blame him. He got his boss to approve him from working at home. His excuse was that I was having difficulties with the pregnancy and couldn't be left alone. Which that part was true. I was still technically on bed rest until today I had a doctor's appointment to see if I can start doing small things at least get out of the house.

Being at home all day was driving me up the wall. And it didn't help that he was asking me every 30 minutes if I was ok which he is just being a loving husband. We were getting ready to leave to go the appointment I finally got Andrew to change his mind about me giving birth in a hospital. I know that Zack is a friend of his but he is still apart of that cult and I didn't trust the man. We got out to the car and drove there.

"Hopefully I will be able to get off bed rest"

"Yeah but that doesn't mean you go crazy with it baby still got to take it easy"

"Yeah I know baby" I said as we pulled into the parking lot and got out. Andrew walked over and opened the door for me. Closed it and wrapped his arm around me as we walked in. We waited in the waiting room until we got called back. I had to get undressed and into a gown and I laid up on the table. I started pushing on my boobs. "What are you doing baby?" He said. "Do you think they are getting bigger?" I asked. He just laughed and kissed my forehead and said "Yeah just a little bit". We finally heard a knock and the doctor came in. "How are feeling today?" He as asked.

"Way better" I said. "Thats good" he said "Lets see how your baby is doing" he said. I laid back as the nurse lifted up my gown they could actually do the somogram on my stomach now. She globbed a bunch of jelly on it and the doctor took the wond and started moving it around. The heart beat was heard instantly which was a good thing. "The heart rate is a little high" he said. I guess thats more bed rest for me I said to myself. "Oh wait a minute" the doctor said.

I just turned to Andrew as he picked up my hand. "Whats wrong with our baby?" Andrew asked. The doctor just turned to us and smiled. "There's nothing wrong with your babies" he said. "See nothing wrong baby" I said. Andrew just had this open mouth look on his face and I guess he caught on to it before I did. "Did you just say babies?" Andrew asked. The doctor smiled and turned the monitor around. "Yes there is two" he said pointing at them. "How can that be? There was only one before" I said

"Some times early on if theres twins they like to hide behind on another and since you were really early we couldn't tell. But now we for sure can" he said smiling at us. "Congratulations" he said. "Holy shit" I said looking at Andrew he was in a daze. "Twins" he said again. "Umm baby" I said. He looked over at me and said it again "Twins". "Yes Mr. Jules there is two babies" the doctor said. "Twins" he said again. His face was turning pale as he just sat down in the chair. "Are you ok baby?" I asked. He looked at me and smiled "Little shocked but I am fine" he said.

"Can you tell if they are going to be identical or fraternal?" I asked "It looks like they are going to be identical so you will either have two boys or two girls" the doctor said. "Two babies" Andrew said again. "I will give you guys a minute and get your husband a bottle of water" the doctor said leaving along with the nurse. "Baby snap out of it" I said. "I thought you wanted more than 1 kid anyway" I said. "I did I do I just didn't think it would ever happen" he said smiling. "I am so happy and shocked at the same time" he said standing up next to me. "I am beyond happy baby girl" he said kissing me. "Are you happy?" He asked.

"Of course I am" I said. "I am still going with boys" I said. "We shall see. I love you baby thank you for giving me the best present anyone could ever ask for" he said. "Well I did have some help" I

said laughing. "You did shoot your little guys right up there" I said. He just smiled and kissed me again over and over. The doctor came back in and asked if Andrew was feeling better. He just smiled and said yes.

The doctor did clear me off bed rest and said I can get out of the house just still take it easy don't rush into anything and still get plenty of rest. I honestly had never seen Andrew this happy. I knew he always wanted kids and now hes getting two. Either 2 boys which I don't think has ever happened in his little cult world. Or two girls which is double the bad

#41(bonus)

It was the next day and I think Andrew was still in shock about it and I was too. I would catch him just staring at me and smiling. "What?" I finally snapped at him. "Nothing baby girl I am just happy. I have a great wife and holy shit still cant believe it two babies on the way." He said. "I know crazy huh?" I said "Well thats what you get for having sex everyday" I said. "That is true plus you were a virgin...virgins seem to get pregnant faster" he said. "Yeah well this proves it" I said putting my hands on my stomach.

"I got a question for yah baby?" I asked. "Yes sweetie" he said. "Has anyone ever had twins in your little group?" I asked "Yes once that I know of it was like 30 years ago" he said."what happened?" I asked "As far as i know they were both girls. The wife got beaten to death because she gave her husband two girls. The Master didn't even let the husband see his daughters they were taken away from him and dropped off at a orphanage. He he himself didn't even want anything to do with his daughters and as a punishment he let them do those things to his wife" he said

"Oh ok" I said. "But apparently if your wife gives you twin boys you are chosen as a high end master or some shit like that" he said. "Sounds fun" I said being sarcastic. "Baby..." he turned to me. "Yes baby" I said. "Do you really think they are boys?" He asked. "Yes" I said. "That might be easier then" he said. "What would be?" I asked "If the babies are boys I would get the master title and be able to just walk out myself" he said.

"What are you implying at?" I asked "What if I stay in it until they are born?" He asked "What are you fucking stupid?" I said "Hey don't raise your voice at me" he said. "No Andrew you promised me you sat there and cried like a baby promising me and my stomach you would get us out before I went into labor" I said. "Listen to me" he said grabbing my arm and looking at me. "I know them way more than you do and hate to admit it your father is right it would be worse getting out" he said.

"What are you going to do if our babies do come girls your going to have to watch them beat me over and over again and take our children away are you willing to risk that?" I asked "A part of me wants to" he said. "Wow" I said "Go fuck yourself Andrew I thought you were a better husband than that let alone a better father" I said getting up y grabbing the keys to my car. Even though its been sitting in the garage forever it was still there. I put my flip flops in and started heading towards the front door. "And where do you think your going?" He said stepping in front of me. "Away from my master" I said.

He just looked at me like I was crazy for saying that but he is going back on his word and I don't go for that shit. "Your not taking my kids away from me" he said. "Maybe if their father wasn't a fucking idiot I wouldn't have to walk out" I said.

"I trusted you and believed you and you want to stay in this shit just because I have a feeling the babies are boys..what if I am wrong and they are girls. You would lose everything. Your wife, your kids and your willing to risk that" I said raising my voice a little higher. "Maybe thats some thing you can think about while I am gone" I said opening the front door." Call me when you figure out what you want" I yelled at him as I started my car and left him standing there.

MY MASTER

#42

I drove around for an hour just thinking how he could even ask that or even think of it in the first place. I didn't know where to really go. Some how I ended up down town and was pulling in front of his sister's store. I looked at my phone and had 17 missed calls from him and god knows how many texts. All of them saying pretty much the same thing that he was sorry. Yeah if hes that sorry he wouldn't of said that in the fucking first place.

I threw my phone in my purse and walked in side of her store. She greeted me as I had my sunglasses over my face and she knew I had been crying. "What the fuck did my brother do?" She asked as she was hugging me. We walked back to her office. We both sat down on the couch and faced each other. I lifted up my sunglasses and just started talking

I told her everything from the beginning how we met, how controlling he was, the night he beat me, how it was his idea to get married, then of course told her that I do love him that I really did just not at first. About the night I saw my father for the first time, how I talked to my mother, then the night he let me go with another guy to have him kiss me and touch me then because he didn't want to say no to my father because it was my father's idea for this man to do it. Then how also that night we almost had a miscarriage.

Then I got kidnapped from our house because my father wanted to speak to me and ended up in



bed with another man against my will because it was punishment from my father to Andrew. That Andrew did finally show up but it was still traumatizing and the fact another man put himself inside of me. I did leave out the part about Andrew killing the guy though. "And by the way,..." I told her still crying. "We found out yesterday we are having twins" I said. "Thats great about the twins part sweetie but what happened today?" She asked.

I told her that he had the nerve to ask me to stay in it. Just because I had a feeling they were boys and it would be easier to get out. That he actually wanted to risk it just because of my feeling. She just shock her head and hugged me. "Hes a fucking idiot" she said. I just cried on her shoulder and said " I trusted him to get us out and he wants to stay in". "I know its really fucked up". Just then there was a knock at the door. A young girl opened it and said "Angie your brother is on the phone he said its an emergency". "Ok thank you" she said as the girl shut the door. "Let me see what my lovely brother has to say" she said. "Don't tell him I am here" I said.

She just nodded yes and walked over to her desk and picked up the phone. "Yes Andrew" she said. "No I haven't heard from her what happened?" She asked. She jestered her finger to tell me to come here. I walked over to the desk and she clicked it over to speaker phone. He was crying so much I could barely understand him. "Calm down Andrew where are you at?" She asked. " I am driving around looking for her" he said. "What happened that made her leave?" She asked. "I messed up big time. I told her I wanted to stay in it until the babies are born..sorry for telling you now but we are having twins..that's if she ever lets me see them or I find her....ughhhhhhn" he grunted.

" I am a big fuck up Angie" he said. "I don't think you are Andrew I just don't think you know what to do yourself" she said. "I don't I really don't" he said. "I love her so much and can't imagine my life without her but I know some things are going to happen before I can get out some fucked up shit I don't even know whay I will have to do and I am honestly scared of what they are and the out come of it" he said. "Its understandable that you are scared but you have to do what is best for your family its not all about Andrew anymore" she said.

"You have a wife and most of all two innocent babies that are coming into this world not knowing anything and don't need to be a part of it. All they want is great parents who love them" she said. I just listened to him start crying more and more that he could barely talk. I really didn't know how he was driving to be honest. "Where do you think she is?" He asked. She just looked at me as I did her I nodded my head yes at her indicating to tell him I was with him. "Andrew..." She said. "Your wife is with me" she said.

"Can she hear me?" He asked. "Yes she had been standing here the whole time" she said. "Baby" he said. I just stood there I didn't know what to say. "Baby please talk to me..can I come see you.I need to see you" he said. I just closed my eyes. "Baby girl please just say anything even if it is to tell me you hate me I just need to hear your voice" he said still crying. I just stood there I felt

Angie's hand wrapped around me. "Baby please" he said. "I don't hate you" I said. He just started sobbing and crying more. "Thank you for not hating me baby" he said. "I am sorry baby can I come see you, you don't have to come home with me I just want to see you" he said. "Yes" I said. I felt Angie's hand pat my shoulder. "Ok baby girl I will be there soon. I love you so much and I understand right now if you don't say it to me" he said. "I love you too but I am pretty upset with you" I said. "I know baby I will be there in a little bit" he said. "Ok" I said and hung up in him.

#43 (Bonus)

I just sat back down on the couch just waiting for him to bust through the doors or something. I didn't know what to say to him or just let him do all the talking and just go from there. It had been about 15 minutes until I heard a soft knock on her office door. Angie yelled "Come in" as I looked up and saw the door open really slowly. He walked in looking at me his eyes were really puffy and sad.

He had a blank look on his face. And just walked in and slowly closed the door behind him. He walked up to me and stood in front of me just looking at me like he was about to start crying again but was fighting it. Angie walked over to him and hugged just like every time else she saw him. "Before you start Andrew..." She said. "She told me everything and I mean everything from the first day you met her all leading up to what happened today..and all I got to say is that person she was telling me about is not my brother..and if you are going to be a person like that I don't want you in my life any more. I know you will do the right thing you are a better person..a better brother..a better husband and now a better father..than what you have done. And if you do anything else to her again I don't care what the fuck it is I will take her away from you myself and you will never see her again or your kids. So my suggestion to you is grow a pair get out of this fucked up situation you are even and go a loving husband and father. I know you can do it..but you might have to convince your wife of that right now. Because if she forgives you then I will" she said.

"I hope I can get her forgiveness and let her trust me" he said. "Well go and try I am going to step out but if she yells for me then it's on and you know I am worse than any mother fucking cunt" she said. "I know" he said to her. "Alright yell if you need me sweetie" she said to me as she left and shut the door behind her. He turned and knelt down in front of me taking his hands into mine and looking at me directly in the eyes.

"I can tell you I am sorry all day every day and mean but I know I have to get you to trust me. I know it took you a while to trust me after everything I did to you and I believe well I hoped that you were trusting me a 100% and today saying those things to you just knocked a lot of trust you had in me. To be honest baby I am scared I have never been so scared in my life. Which says a lot being deployed almost dying over there but this...this is what scares me so much..the fact is I might lose

you..or something might happen to you..while trying to get out of this..it scares me so much baby" he said as he was starting to cry again.

"I really don't know what to do..if I do what they say something might happen to you and if I wait it out something might happen to you and the babies...I am just so scared" he said. "I am scared too. But I don't want our babies being scared after they are born. rather us take care of it now than them having to deal with it too" I said. "I know baby and I am so sorry for saying that I want our babies to be born without this hanging over me" he said. "Then rather we are scared or not we have to do it just to finally get away" I said.

"I know theres going to be consciences about you wanting to quit but who gives a shit just do them and let them happen. I can't believe I am saying that because I know my father and how his fucked up mind works but just do them" I said. "Ok baby I will get it done. I know I have said that before but I am going to stick to it this time. I have been ignoring their phone calls past week and I am sure they just want to talk and explain to me everything that has happen but ive just been to scared to answer it" he said. "Just like your sister said it's time to suck it up and do it" I said. "Yes it is baby" he said. "Are you going to come home with me?" He asked. "You know I can't sleep without your big head taking up the bed" I said.

He just smiled at me. "And I can't sleep without my wife in my arms" he said. I just cocked a half smile at him. "I love you so much baby girl" he said. I looked directly at him right into his eyes even though I am still upset at him I do love him. "I love you" I said. He leaned in and just hugged me. "I really thought I would never hear you say that to me again" he said in my ear. "I do love you baby" I said kissing the side of his head. He pulled away and leaned his lips into mine. Lightly kissing them then gently sliding his tongue in to my mouth. I let his tongue slide around mine as I wrapped my arms around his neck. Taking my tongue and kissing him back. We just kissed each other like it was the first night we made love to each other. Well the first time that I actually did it to him.

I could hear his heart start to calm down as we continued letting our tongues glide around each other. I pulled away and looked at him. He smiled at me. I smiled back. "I love you my love" I said. "I love you so much baby" he said. As I leaned forward this time kissing him. I pulled him into me as I leaned back onto the couch and pulled him on top of me. He climbed on top of me kissing me a little rougher but not to hard. Then started kissing my neck down to my ears kissing little kisses in different places. Using his tongue making little circles on my neck. He went back up to my ear and whispered "Do you want to make love to me baby?" He asked. "Mmmm why do you think I pulled you up in the couch" I moaned in his ear.

He just lightly moaned in my ear as he turned me around so that I was laying on the couch he sat up on top of me by my legs and slide down my pants along with my panties. He undid his belt and unbuttoned his jeans and took them off. He reached up and took his shirt off. Seeing his muscles every time just makes him more sexier. He lifted me up kissing my collar bone as he lifted up my

shirt and undoing my bra. Tossing them both on the ground. He laid me back down by kissing me again sliding his tongue in my mouth as he was getting in between my legs. I opened them up for him as he laid down in between them. His cock was already sliding up and down my pussy making me more wet. It was really teasing me. He pulled away from the kiss and looked into my eyes.

"I love you" he said. "I love you baby" as he moaned and pushed the head of his cock inside of me. "Ahhhh" I moaned. As he pulled it and pushed it back in again. He leaned down and started kissing my neck nibbling on it a little bit. As he was going in and out of me faster and deeper. Grinding his hips into mine as his cock was hitting the back of my pussy and then being pulled out and pushed right back in. I wrapped my legs around him pulling him into me so his dick would go deeper. I took my hands and put them in his hips and moved them with his hips as he was going deeper and faster. "Ahhhh ahhhh baby" I said. I could feel my pussy contracting tighter around his dick as it was getting wetter I tighter. He started moaning and grunting louder in my ear which was making me close to cumming more and he knew it. "Cum for me baby" he said in my ear as he started pumping faster inside my pussy as I couldn't hold back any more.

"Ahhhhhhh ahhhh ohhh Stephen" I moaned as I squirted all over him. He just smiled at me and put his forehead against mine and started going fast and hard I wrapped my arms around his neck and pulled him into me biting on his shoulder and gripping my fingers on his back. "Oh oh baby I am cumming" he grunted. "Ahhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhhh" he said as I felt him shoot his load inside of me. He thrust a few more times as I still felt his dick twitching inside of me. He looked at me and kissed me. "I love you baby girl" he said "I love you" I said as he kissed me again. He pulled himself out of me as I leaned up and some of his cum came oozing out of me onto the couch. I looked at his cock which was still pretty hard and it was covered in my cum and his. He sat down for a second to catch his breath. I sat up next to him and leaned down and started sucking on his cock licking both of our cum off of it. He had no objections as I felt his hand start running through my hair feeling his cock growing inside of my mouth. I just started sliding my tongue all around it sucking slowly on the head and a little rougher.

I felt it start twitching again as I knew he can get off fast with a blowjob. He started pushing my head down a little bit which indicated to me to suck faster he was close. I started sliding his dick in and out of my mouth feeling it hit the back of my throat hearing him moan louder and started thrusting his hips so that his dick went further. He grabbed the back of my head and moaned "Here it comes baby" I slide his dick down my throat deep throating it as soon as it hit the of my throat I started tasting it. "Ahhhhhh ahhh" he moaned and his dick twitched and exploded shooting his cum as I swallowed it and then licked and sucked his cock clean. I sat up and looked at him..."Really?" He said. "MmmHmm" I said. "Your amazing you know that, you didn't have to do that" he said. "Yeah but I wanted to" I said as he leaned in and kissed me.

"Ahhh my sister is going to have a cow that we just did that in her couch but you know what baby I don't care" he said. As we both got up and got dressed. He just stood there and held me for a few

minutes. Just listening to each other breathing. "You are the best wife any guy could ask for" he said. "Yeah but I am yours" I said. He kissed the top of my head and tightly hugged me. "Lets go home my love" he said. "Yes baby" I said smiling at him.

.  
.  
.  
.  
.  
MY MASTER

.  
.  
#44  
.

I was close to being 6 months pregnant. Since Andrew and I had a little break down and fight a while back we have actually been getting along really good. He still works from home and he probably will until way after the babies are born. The group of rejects haven't really bothered him about anything but they did want us to come to this event tonight. It was a Friday night but first we had a doctor's appointment and hopefully get to find out the sex of our babies.

.  
A part of me doesn't want to find out just because what if my feelings about them are wrong I would have to face these idiots later and hold myself from crying because they are girls. Andrew had about 3 months to get the shit together and honestly I think my father and the other assholes are stalling just to see what the sex of the babies are when they are born. Yes word did get around that we were having twins. And most of all alot of them kept telling Andrew wouldn't it be great if they were boys.

.  
That they could be the future of their cult and alot of other shit I pretended not listen to when we were at those parties. But we still went to them just so that Andrew could show to them how serious he was. But once they started talking about the babies being girls and the things they would do to me I would just bow my head in disgust and try to block it out. I am honestly scared of my life right now and for my children's. Things are taking slower than what I thought and it scares the living shit out of me.

.  
Time just keeps going by faster and my belly keeps getting bigger to the point when I lift up my shirt I can see them moving around. My doctor even told me that there is a good chance that since I am having twins I will have to get induced early so they will be here a few weeks earlier than expected. That made me more nervous. But I do got to trust my husband. "Ready baby?" He said as I felt his hand touch my shoulder as I was deep into thought about everything. We aren't supposed to know the sex of the babies but Andrew more than I wants to know.

.  
"Yes baby" I sighed putting my hand on the side of the couch and pushing myself up. It is starting

to get harder doing things and I want to be independent as much as I can at least until I can't anymore. Its bad enough I am starting to not see my feet any more but at least I can still get up on my own. We drove to the doctors office and was waiting in the waiting room. My leg was twitching nervously like a freight train waiting to take off. I felt Andrews hand touch my leg as I turned to him and he just smiled at me. I smiled back and just sighed.

It was going to happen either way and we were going to know if we were having boys or girls. We finally got called back in to a room as I laid down on the table I think I looked more sick to my stomach to be there than happy. I didn't even see the doctor come in and start talking. I think I just pretend to smile at him when he was talking to me. As Andrew did all the talking. I felt the jelly hit my stomach and the wand start moving around it was really cold and alot of pressure. He turned the screen around and the babies were there. Their heart beats were going like crazy and you could already start to see their heads and little fingers in the shots.

I remember like it was yesterday they were just little circles. That honestly looked like headlights. He moved the wand specifically to the first baby and enlarged it. He called them baby A and baby B. "Well since they are identical what ever baby A is baby B will be as well.." the doctor said. I just grasped his hand tighter in mind and looked at him he was concentrating so hard on the monitor that he didn't even see me look at him. "Alright its very clear what you guys are having..."he said. I just closed my eyes and looked away. "Congratulations you are having.."he said I cut him off and yelled "I don't want to know dont say it". Andrew and the doctor just turned and looked at me.

"Baby whats wrong?" He asked. I just started feeling tears going down my face. I just shook my head my head no at him. "Baby but I want to know I need to know" he said. "Then only you know I don't want to" I said. The doctor looked at me. "Are you sure?" He said. "Yes just tell my husband I don't want to know" I said. "Alright" he said taking the wand off ny stomach and the nurse whipped off the jelly from my stomach as Andrew and the doctor stepped out into the hallway. They weren't gone but a few seconds and came back inside.

I couldn't tell from the expression on his face as he came back over to me and kissed my forehead."Alright guys I will see you in a few weeks call if you need anything" he said. As Andrew shook his hand and I sat up pulling my shirt back down and standing up. Andrew picked up my hand as we walked out to the car. He opened the door for me and closed it after I got in. He came around and got in to the driver side and got in closing the door and starting the car. He just picked up my hand and kissed it. Him being this quite I couldn't tell if they were boys or girls. Either girls because he is being too quite and didn't want to worry me or they are boys and he is hiding his excitement.

#45(bonus)

On the way back home he didn't say anything to me. I finally just snapped at him. "So your not going to talk now?" I asked. "You didn't want to know baby and I am not going to tell you" he just looked over and grinned at me. "That doesn't mean you don't talk all together" I said. "Well baby nothing to talk about. Which is hard because this is something I wanted to talk about with you after we found out" he said. "Why don't you want to know anyway?" He asked.

"You want the truth?" I asked. "That would be nice" he said. "I am scared. Its bad enough I am scared enough as it is. But I am scared to know" I said. "Theres nothing to be scared of baby no matter what we are having theres no reason to be scared" he said. "I can't help it they are growing and time is going by fast" I said. "I know baby. I am actually going to get to sit down with Leon tonight and get this shit going" he said. I just sighed why can't he just take me and the babies away. Go into hiding just run away.

"Why can't we just run away baby?" I asked. "Trust me I have thought about it" he said. "Then why not? Wouldn't that be better?" I said.. "I don't know baby girl" he said. "Whats so hard about it.. if you have thought about it then do it. Or have you just been stalling like the rest of them" I snapped. "Someone got an extra dose of hormones today" he said "But no I am not stalling" he said. "Well I am not waiting around forever" I said. "What does that mean?" He asked. "It means I gave myself and our babies a time limit. Rather you come or not or out of this shit I am getting away from it and taking them too" I said.

"You would really leave me and take our kids?" He said. "They are inside of me they go where I go" I said. "Over my dead body" he snapped back. "What are you implying at Andrew" I said getting defensive.. "nothing just fucking nothing" he said.. "You still like having that power don't you?" I asked. "I did it before you I can do it after you" he said getting very red in the face.. "I see then Andrew" I said. Getting out of the car before he even put it in park when we pulled into the driveway.

I ran inside the fastest I could. I went straight into the bedroom locking the door. He fucking likes the control thing. What an idiot I was for believing his shit time and time again. I was really surprised he didn't kick the door in or anything. But I just gathered a few things shoving them into my bag and opened the door. He wasn't in the hallway so I started moving towards the front door. I opened it as he reached above me and slammed it shut.. "I told you no" he said. "Well I am saying yes Andrew" I yelled at him. "Your not taking my kids from me" he yelled.

"I am not staying here you are not even trying to leave and get away" I yelled. "You haven't given me enough time" he yelled. "Its been almost 6 months that's plenty of fucking time" I yelled. I reached for the door knob and tried to open it. He grabbed my arm tightly and pulled me back.. "Like I said no" he said. "Oh and what are you going to do beat me get me to stay or get down on your knees and beg and cry for me" I said.. he just glared at me like he did when we first

met. Those eyes of rage and darkness. I honestly thought I would never see them again.

"He's back" I whispered under my breath. "Excuse me?" He said. "Nothing" I said. "You want to play that game ok. Your not going to fucking leave this house. I paid good money for you and I fucking own you" he said. "Did you just say you paid money for me?" I asked. "You got that right sweetheart..I guess your daddy forgot to mention that he paid me to get you. To get you underneath me. Fuck the whole website and us meeting from that. Your father paid me a lot of money to find you. And I did. I had you tracked down to your friends house long before you even knew I existed. When I saw you made that profile of your self I knew that was a good time to get you. And I fucking did." He said.

"Wow so I am going to take a wild and fucking guess that you don't even love me just with me because my father paid you" I said. "No I do love you. But that part came after" he said. "Go fuck yourself Andrew I don't even know you anymore I can't believe I fell in love with a person like you" I said. "Tough life ain't it baby girl" he said finally letting my arm down. I turned and grabbed the door again. "Like I fucking said your not taking my daughter's from me" he yelled.....I just started crying not for the fact he was being a dickhead but he just told me my babies are girls.

MY MASTER

I just slide down the wall to the floor and cried. He stood over me and watched me for a few minutes. Eventually sitting down next to me and trying to pick up my hand. "Don't touch me" I said pulling my hand back. "I am sorry I didn't tell you that before but I had finally gotten you to trust me and love me and didn't want it blowing up in my face like it just did" he said. "I do love you and fell in love with you. That wasn't your fathers idea that he had and trust me I got shit for it. He just wanted me to get you as my slave and to treat you like one. I myself didn't know I was going to fall in love with you but you can't help feelings and love you get for some one. I stopped taking your fathers money after the night I beat you. I knew than I loved you. You can ask my sister. I cried so hard for the first time in my life since I was 15 when my mom left us. Rather you choose to believe any of this or not this is the truth" he said.

"Are they really girls?" I asked "Yes the babies are girls. At least that's what the doctor said" He said. "Ok" I said. I just sat there gazing into the wall. I didn't know what to think or do just staring off into space. No emotions no expressions no nothing. "You need to get off the floor baby" he said I just turned to him and nodded. That part he was right about. He got up first and stood up in front of me. He opened his hands out wanting me to take them. "I am not going to hurt you" he said. I just looked at him I had to get off the floor some how. I put my hands in his as he pulled me



up. I just stood there and looked at him. "Where do you want to go?" He asked.

I just cleared my throat and softly said "Couch". "Ok baby" he said wrapping his arm around me and walked me to the couch and guiding me down on the couch. He walked into the kitchen and came back with a bottle of water. "Here baby" he said. I didn't say anything I just took it from him. He sat down on the floor in front of me. "Baby say something or am I not allowed to call you that" he said "Why?" I asked. "Why what sweetie?" He said. "Why can't you just let me go?" I asked. He had this look on his face like I just ripped out his heart and stopped on it. But I didn't give a shit.

"Because you are my wife. Mother to my daughter's. And at some point you loved me and I think deep down you still do" he said. "Why put some one you love through all of this why?" I asked. "Its not that I want to I have no choice" he said. "If you love me like you claim you do you would have gotten us out a long time ago" I said. "I know and I regret it" he said. "I don't believe that" I said. "How can I make you believe me?" He asked. "Let me and our babies go" I said. "I will under one condition" he said. "What?" I said. "I go with you" he said. "So that you can control me and be an ass to me some more" I said. "No to be a family and a husband" he said. I could feel the sniffing coming up in my nose.

"So heres your choice Andrew its either me and our babies or those sick bastards I am not going to play along with that shit any more. And I am not saying if you pick us me and you will be ok. But you need to be there for them. They need a father" I said. "I know you and I won't be perfect its going to take me to do some major ass kissing but I want to be that husband that father" he said. "Then what do you pick?, Because I am not staying here any more" I said. "What do you think I have chosen baby." He said. "I don't know enlighten me" I said. "I chose you and the babies" he said. "Then we do it my way" I said.

"Ok" he said. "I want to leave right now" I said. He stood up in front of me and said "You got it" "Take us far away. Right now our babies need a safe place. We will talk about us later on." I said. "We there ever be us again?" He asked. "I honestly don't know. Right its all about our babies" I said. "Ok I will go get us something's together. I will take us away" he said. He walked away into our room and I heard him going through dresser drawers and making alot of noise. He came back about 20 minutes later with several bags suitcaes etc and took them out to the car. He came back in and looked at me. "Remember its my way or no way now" I said "You got it sweetie" he said as he opened his hands out and I put mine in his as he pulled me up. Walking me out to the car. I got into the front seat and he closed the door.

He got in the driver seat and started the car. "Where to?" He asked. "Just drive I will tell you when to stop" I said. "Ok" he said pulling out of the drive way. He got on to the main highway and just started driving north. "Give me your cell phone" I said. "Ok baby" he said handing it right over as I took mine and his rolled down the window and threw them. "Just in case" I said. "Good idea" he said. As he continued driving into the night.

.

We drove and drove for hours and hours. I did know that I needed to get my babies to a safer place I knew that he was going to try to work things out between us but how can you forgive someone who lied to you from the beginning did all of those horrible things to you, which I forgave him for because I did love him, I am not going to lie deep down there is love for him but I can't forgive him for any of it. I couldn't keep my babies away from him he knows hes the father and I couldn't keep them away from their father I am not that cold hearted.

.

I was getting tired and I know he had no idea where I wanted to go but I wish I could read his mind and actually know what hes thinking. "Can you find a hotel for the night?" I asked him. He looked over at me he still had a sad look in his eyes I am sure he was wondering where I wanted to go and the fact he did love me. But how can you love someone and do all of those things to and then keep a big part of it from the person you do love. "Of course baby" he said. I just turned up and looked at him "Sorry its a habit to call you that" he said. I just looked away from him and gave him a cold shoulder.

.

I could hear him sigh and sniffle. His little crying isn't going to get me to forgive him. I am not falling for that one again. We drove another 20 minutes and he exited off and went down to this hotel. It wasn't a run down place it was actually kind of nice. He pulled up under the entrance way. Opened the door and said "I will be right back" I just turned to him and nodded ok. I honestly didn't want to speak to him but I know eventually I was going to have to. He came back about 10 minutes later not saying anything just got in started the car and drove around to the back. He got out I opened my door and got out myself. I followed him to the door and walked in. We walked down a ways and stopped.

.

He opened the door and me go in first. "Sorry all they had was a one bed king size" he said. "Yeah sure they did" I said going in. "They really did something about a wedding being here tomorrow" he said shutting the door. I just walked in and went straight to the bed and kicked off my shoes and laid down. "Are you hungry?" He asked "No" I said. "You need to eat you haven't all day and that is something I will put my foot down about those are still my babies in you" he said. "Then why did you ask?" I said. "You don't have to be a smart ass I know you hate me right now and probably will never be my wife again but your still the mother of my kids and still got to take care of yourself while your pregnant" he said. "I know" I said.

.

"Ok I will order a pizza" he said going over to the phone that was in the room and called it in. I didn't say another word to him until the pizza arrived. He went and answered the door and paid for. He came over to my side of the bed sat down on the end opened up the box and said "Here eat". I sat up and pulled a piece out and just ate it. He watched me eat it. "Aren't you going to eat too?" I asked. "I don't have an appetite to eat" he said. "If I have to you have to" I said. He just smiled at me and picked up a slice and ate as I picked up another one. He just kept starring at me

while I was eating. "What?" I finally asked. "You are just beautiful" he said. "Please I am huge as a house and stuffing my face with pizza" I said.

He just smiled at me and said "Yeah but you still are I am sorry I didn't say it enough" "Don't start please" I said. "I am sorry but you are beautiful and I can tell you I am sorry all day long but it won't change anything. You don't want me anymore" he said. "How can I be with you when you hide things from me. Took money from my father. Beat me. You raped me the first night we were together controlled me. Threatened me if I didn't do what you said. Remember that?" I said. "Yes I do and I will never forget those things I did to you. But you fell in love with me you trusted me" he said. "Yeah and its all gone" I said. "You don't love me anymore...you can't fall out of love with someone after a fight in less than 4 hours" he said.

"That's true but my love for you has died down Andrew. I did trust you and did love you so much that it was crazy how much I did love you but you betrayed me. Husband's and wives don't hide that kind of stuff from each other" I said. "You could of told me that along time ago. I understand maybe you couldn't before we got married but after that we were happy. I was happy. For the first time in my life I was happy because someone loved me. I didn't get that growing up. You know how hard it was hearing daily I was mistake and wish I was never born. Or the fact that my father didn't want me. Has never told me he loved me. My mother didn't tell me she loved me until I was 10 years old. But having someone telling me they loved me everyday and I believed they meant it. That was the best feeling ever." I said.

"But learning you were looking for me from the beginning because my father paid you to. To me that was the worse things to find out. That someone you loved and loved you back hide something that bad from you. That's what hurts." I said throwing down the pizza crust into the box. "I know telling you I am sorry isn't going to fix that." He said. "But I do love you. I did fall in love with you and I am sorry" he said. "I just want my loving wife back" he said. "I don't know" I said. "Well I know deep down you do love me and maybe one day you can realize it again." He said. I didn't know what to say to him except "I think I am going to take a shower and go to bed". "Ok" he said sighing. I got up took a shower when I came out he had went out to the car and gotten some clean clothes for me and laid them on the bed.

I had a towel wrapped around me and just dropped it and put them on I didn't feel like going back to the bathroom and changing. I saw in the corner of my eyes he was looking at me. "Like what you see" I said. "I always have and always will. I will keep saying it you are beautiful" he said. I just pulled back the blanket and sheet and laid. "Can I tell my daughter's good night at least?" He asked. "Of course" I said. He got up leaned forward into my stomach and laid his head on it. I could hear him breathing heavier and he said "I am sorry I have let you girls down. I am not the best person in the world but I am going to make it up to you. You deserve the best dad in the world and you are going to get him. I love you girls so much and your not even here yet. I can imagine what you will look like but I can't sometimes. I hope you are beautiful like your mom. God knows

you don't need my looks. You mean everything to me and I am not going to mess anything up any more. I just want us to be the family I have always wanted but its not going to happen the way I dreamed it. Just know you girls will always have a place in my heart and I will love you more than you can imagine. Goodnight sweet angels daddy loves you" he said kissing my stomach about 5 times and leaning up and looking up at me he had tears in his eyes and said "Good night".

"Goodnight" I said as he rolled over and faced the other direction as I laid down and faced the opposite.

.  
. .  
.

MY MASTER

.  
. .  
#47

.

I got woken up at the middle of the night to incredible pain in my stomach. I got up and went to the bathroom figured maybe I just had to go to the bathroom. But after about 20 minutes it didn't going away. I got up and started to walked back into the room when I felt something a sharp pain in my lower stomach then something start leaking down my legs. I flipped on the bathroom light and just stood there. My water had broke. These babies were coming. "Andrew get up get up" I screamed.

.

I heard him ruffle through the bed sheets and stumble in here trying not to hit anything on the way to me. " What whats wrong?" He asked panicking. "My water broke" I said. "What are you sure?" He asked. "Well I did pee myself so I am sure" I said. "They can't come this early you are just at 6 months" he said. "Well tell them that they have other plans" I said. "Ok we gotta get you to a hospital they can't stay in there very long after your water breaks" he said. "How do you know that?" I asked. "Ive been reading a few books ever since we found out we were having a baby" he said.

.

"Oh" I said as he took my hands and I stepped over the watery bloody mess that was on the floor. I slipped on my shoes as he got dressed and walked me out to the car. He turned on his GPS that was in the car. "The nearest hospital is about 30 minutes away" he said. "Ok just get there" I said. As he started the car and slammed it into gear and drove off pretty quickly. I could start feeling pains in my stomach as I just started screaming. "What is it baby?" He asked. "I think they are contractions" I said. He just looked at me and grabbed my hand "just squeeze it if you need to I am going to get you there as fast as I can" he said. We literally got there in about 15 minutes I was definitely having contractions every few minutes.

.

He pulled up into the emergency lane jumped out and ran inside. He came out with what looked like a doctor and couple nurses. They helped me out of the car and into a wheel chair and took me

inside. "Sir you have to move your car she is going to be taken up to the 3rd floor" one of the nurses told him. He looked at me and said "I will be right behind you I promise" he said. I just said "Ok hurry". Even though I was still mad and upset at him that was the last thing on my mind right now. I still needed him there. I got taken up to the 3rd floor rushed into a labor and delivery room and put into a bed. The doctor examined me really quickly and said "They have to come out right now they are too young to stay in and go through the process of birth. Your going to have to get a C section."

I just laid there as the nurses helped me change into a gown and prep me to go into the operating room. "Give us about 5 minutes and we will be back to get you"she said. I heard Andrew run through the door way to the room and over to me. "Whats going to happen?" He asked. "They are doing a C section the babies are coming out now" I said. He just sighed and hugged me whispering in my ear "This is all my fault all my fault I made this happen" as he started crying. I started crying with him. I knew that having the babies this early there was a good chance they wouldn't make it and it would be a long road a head of us if they held on. The doctor came in and said "Alright let's go ahead and go".

Andrew looked at him and the doctor said "I am sorry Mr Jules but since this is an emergency c section you can't come with us". "Just please let him" I said "I can't do it without him" I said. "Alright the nurses will bring you some scrubs put them on and come get you when you can come in. Just sit behind her head" he said. "Whats the chance?"Andrew asked. "I am not going to lie about 50/50 I have seen it go both ways. So don't be surprised if they don't come out crying their lungs haven't developed yet and probably won't cry at all" he said. As they started pulling me into the hallway. "I will be there as soon as they let me" he said to me and kissing my forehead. I just closed my eyes and let them wheel me in there.

They sat me up and gave me an epidural and laid me back down. They started preparing things until I heard a ladies voice telling me she was the NICU doctor and there was a team of really good nurses and doctors here. I just closed my eyes again and felt tears going down my face. It had been a good 10 minutes until I felt someone kiss my forehead. I opened my eyes and Andrew was sitting above my head. He just kissed my head again as I kept crying as he was too. I could feel his tears start hitting me on the face. "Don't let nothing happen to them I know you will be a good dad" I said.. "You will still be a better mother" he said. I could feel them start putting alot of pressure on my stomach as it felt like it wad being ripped in half. "Here comes the first one" he said as I felt her being pulled out of me. "Look at her" I said. "She needs to at least know one of us in here" I said.

Andrew stood up and looked over the sheet that was put up in front of me. "Mr Jules here is your first daughter" I felt him pick up my hand as he watched them take her away. "Here's the second one" he said as I felt the hard pressure and pulling again. I could feel his hand grip harder as the doctor said "Here's your second daughter" as Andrew didn't say anything but I heard them take

her away too. He sat back down next to me as his eyes were filled with tears. "How did they?" I asked "Beautiful just like their mom" he said kissing me this time on the lips. "I am sorry baby its all my fault" he said "They are going to be ok right?" He asked. "Yes I hope so" I said. "You have to believe it" I said picking up his hand. "I do" I said. "I do too" he said. "Good" I said.

He leaned down and kissed me again. "I love you I understand if you don't say it back but I love you and thank you for giving me two of the most beautiful little girls" he said. I reached my hand up the side of his face. "Thank you for letting me become a mom" I said. He just smiled at me and kissed the side of my hand. "Go be with our babies they need you" I said."Are you sure?" He asked. "Yes" I said. "Ok I will be back soon" he said standing up and about to turn away. "Andrew?" I said. "Yes" he said turning back around. "Come here to me" I said. He lowered his head next to mine as I whispered in his ear "I love you". He just sighed a deep relief "do you really mean it baby?" He asked."Yes baby I do" I said. "Now go be with our babies" I said. He looked up and kissed me again but this time really softly. "I will see you soon baby girl" as he turned around and blew me a kiss before the nurse let him out of the room.

The only thing I remember after he left was that how tired I was getting. I remember waking up off and on as they were stitching me back up. I was so worried about my babies that I was crying so much it was draining me. I remember getting taken into a recovery room and kept asking the nurses when I was going to get to see girls. They just kept telling me that I needed to rest and I would get to see them soon. One of them did tell me that my husband was with them and he would be back here to see me soon that I should just close my eyes and rest.

I didn't know how long I had been asleep until I opened my eyes to Andrew sitting next to me holding my hand in his hands up by his lips kissing it over and over. He was crying. "Your awake" he said. I just opened my eyes more I had a lot of pain in my stomach more like a sharp pain from the many that were in me. And I guess that was expected. "How are they?" I asked. He just closed his eyes and sighed kissing my hand again. "Tell me" I said. "Are they even alive?" I asked. "Yes they are baby. Umm they are really tiny and hooked up to alot of machines. Neither one of them can breathe on their own. They are both in incubators. They just don't know baby its a time thing. We have to just wait and see" he said.

"They both are a little over a pound each. They barely fit into the doctors hands" he said just sighing. I just let the tears fall down my face I knew that it was going to be hard but didn't know it was going to be this hard. "How do they even look?" I asked. "How do you mean baby?" He asked. "Are they suffering?" I asked. "It just looks like they are peacefully sleeping...with a bunch of shit and wires hooked up to them" he said. "I want to see them" I said. "The doctor said you can't get out of bed for a while just in case your staples come out" he said. "Thats bull shit" I said. "I know baby I know" he said leaning in and kissing me. "I love you baby" he said. I kinda if couldn't help that our little fight and the fact I was pissed at him was still in the back of my head.

But I kinda of have to put it a side right now. "This is all my fault if something happens to our daughters I will never forgive myself" he said. "Its no ones fault they wanted to just meet their mommy and daddy sooner than they were supposed to" I said. "You always know how to make me smile" he said. "I try" I said. "Do you really love me?" He asked. "Yes baby I do it wasn't just the drugs talking earlier" I said. He leaned in and kissed me and whispered in my ear " I know you don't 100% forgive me and I am ok with it and I know we are going to have to work on it a lot. Thats if you want to. You just might be telling me you love me just because you do but still don't want to be with me" he said.

.  
"You are right I do love you and miss how we were after we got married I loved it. If we work it out which I am sure will take time we have to be open and honest with each other" I said . " Is there any thing else you hide from me now would be a good time to tell me" I said. "Thats it baby girl I swear that's it." He said. "Ok but for right now I am still your wife. I do love you I really do but the focus right now is our daughters. I know they will have to stay here a long time but when I heal we need to fix everything..and I mean everything for us to go back to being a loving husband and wife again" I said. "I will fix everything and anything you want baby" he said. "Ok baby" I said. "I love you my love thank you for giving me another chance " he said. "I am doing it for all of us. We need to be a family. And I've always wanted a family growing up that I never had. And our daughters don't need to be coming in to this world with their parents already hating each other and seperated" I said.

.  
"You are right. I love you and I love our daughters and I would do anything to make us a family" he said. "Ok baby I will take your word for it" I said. He leaned down and kissed me really passionately and soft running his tongue gently in my mouth as his hands slide up the side of my face. He pulled away and pressed his forehead into mine staring into my eyes. "I love you baby" he said "I love you" I said. He kissed me one more time and sat back down on the chair taking ny hand into his. "So what are we going to name them?" I asked. "Good question baby we never talked about it before" he said. "How about you name one and I name one" I said looking at him. "Sounds good to me baby" he said kissing my hand.

.  
.  
.  
MY MASTER

.  
.  
#48  
.  
.  
.

It was about 2 days later that I could see my girls. Andrew would go several times a day back and

forth to me and them. I knew that he was exhausted. He didn't sleep much and when he did it wasn't for long. We still haven't named them yet and honestly I can't name them until I see them. The doctor and Andrew helped me into a wheelchair and I was finally going to get to meet them. I was still really sore and my stomach where the staples were was turning black and blue. It was swollen and bruised really bad but apparently that was normal. It still hurt sitting down but the pain right now was worth it. I finally got to meet my daughter's.

I got taken up to the NICU there was a few other babies that were as I looked at them as I was being pushed by them. We came to a corner of the room and there was two incubators kind of side by side one another. One the side of them one said Baby Jules A and the other Baby Jules B. I went to the first one and I stood up. "Baby you don't have to get up" he said. "But I want to I want to see her" I said. "Ok babe" he said helping me up as I looked inside. There was this tiny tiny baby. She was beautiful. I started crying as I saw my daughter she was hooked up to all these machines. A breathing tube in her. And what looked like a feeding tube.

She looked so helpless and fragile. That I honestly just wanted to pick her up but I couldn't. I went over to our second daughter who looked exactly like the first. She was just as beautiful. They both didn't look they were in any pain just way too small to have come into this world right now. I really wish they would have stayed in me longer just so that their chances were better. They still didn't know how or what was going to happen to them. It was a waiting game that only time could tell. I just wish I could touch them and make them a 100% better. I know it's going to be a long road but I know in my heart they are going to be ok. I just know it.

I do have to say my feeling about them being boys were wrong but what can you say I have the most beautiful daughters any one could ever ask for. We just stood there and watched our daughters. He held on to me tight as he was just in a daze staring at them. They were the most beautiful girls ever and I have to say them being here has made my husband and I closer together.

## TWO WEEKS LATER

Two weeks have passed and I was released from the hospital a couple days after they were born. but my girls were still there they were still fragile and weak but everyday seems a little more than the day before. they had little to no improvement but that wasn't going to stop them from getting better. Andrew and I went to the hospital everyday and stayed until visiting hours were over. I couldn't wrap my mind around it completely that my daughters were still on the edge of either surviving or not. it was still really heartbreaking to go in there everyday and see them. but I knew that they had the strong heart and body that could pull them out of it.

the doctor said that they have awhile to go at least a couple more months. this was the only time



that I actually prayed to God that my daughters would live and then I would be able to take them home one day. Andrew and I were both mentally and physically drained from all this, to the point that we barely even talk to each other when we got home. we didn't even tell his sister yet the girls were even born, it was something that we kept to ourselves and planned to as long as we could. soon as we would get home from the hospital we would take a shower and go straight to bed. he would lay up behind me and just hold me and comfort me knowing that our daughters were away from us.

.  
we didn't know what else to say to each other except that we love each other and help each other to close throughout the night. and the next morning we would get up go to the hospital and stay with them all day again. for the first few days we did today in the hotel but Andrew eventually found us a house that was only 5 minutes from the hospital. we decided to stay there until our daughters were released and then go from there. it was just a small red house only two bed room that we would go month to month lease on. we still have our old house all of our stuff in it but who knows if we would ever go back to that place again. we had just left the hospital and it was two weeks to the day that our daughters were born.

.  
we drove into the driveway and got out and went to our bedroom. Andrew didn't buy many things we just had the bed and some clothes cause we didn't know how long we were going to actually stay there. I got undressed and the some pajama shorts and a tank top and climbed into bed. I watched him just stand there and look at me like he had this lost a sense of direction and his eyes I knew we had a lot on his mind but I didn't know if I needed to ask him about it or not. I really did miss my husband and the way we used to be I'm not going to lie about that. he did used to make me feel so warm and loving side but since our big blowout and then the fact that daughters were born 3 months early things haven't been the same between us. I could tell that he wanted to tell me something but he didn't know when or how to say it.

.  
finally after he had dressed into his pajama pants and walking over towards the bed I set up and looked at him. "what's wrong?" I asked him. he just turned to me and sighed he had this sad look on his face and about to start crying. I put my hands up on his face and look at him directly in the eyes and ask him again. begging him to please tell me that we were husband and wife and we needed to share each others feelings. "I love you so much baby girl and I'm sorry. our daughters are suffering everyday and it's all because of me. I don't even know how to express my feelings toward you right now. I don't even know if you want me to be your husband anymore" he said. I just tilted my head to the side inside at him.

.  
"how could you even think that I don't want to be your wife anymore?" I asked him. "the past two weeks have been miserable baby. yes we did make two beautiful babies together out of our love to look at them they are suffering and we don't even know if they're going to make it. I wish I could go back in time and fix everything even before we found out we were having a baby just fix it all. but I can't I can't go back and now look look at our daughters I just I just don't know baby" he

said. " all we can do is wait it out babe i know its hard but everyday whether they show it or not they are getting stronger are they wouldn't have made it the day before" I said "I know I'm just ready to hold them and take them home and just be a dad to them" he said.

" I'm ready to take them home to let the best place for them right now is at the hospital.they are taking good care of our baby it's something that we can't do right now" I said. "it will get better soon I promise.they are looking better and better everyday I see them" I said. "I am glad you think that because I don't see it I still see them laying there helpless this shit tons of wires and stuff coming out of them and it looks like they are just in so much pain and miserable.I just want my daughters home.I want my wife back its just something that I can't have right now and I wanted so badly" he said. "you do have me as your wife" I said.

"yeah but its not the same it's just not the same anymore I don't know how to describe it I miss that love I have for you that you have for me.being able to make you smile, and I can't do it anymore.you don't smile for me anymore." He said. "I know we agreed to work things out slowly and get back to the way we were but then to put our daughters first right now did I just miss you I just miss being able to look into your eyes and see your beauty knowing that you are my wife that you will always be mine forever.just want us back to the way we were" he said. "we will get back to the way we were I promise baby" I said kissing him on his lips. "I miss your kisses so much" he said pressing his forehead into mine.

"do you even still trust me?" He asked. "I do baby but we have to get it all worked out and get away our daughters are growing stronger everyday and before we know what we're going to be bringing them home or someone's going to find out we had girls" I said. "I know baby and I been thinking about that I think I need to go away and get this all taken care of by myself" he said. "what do you mean go away?" I asked. "it means it's time for me to go away for awhile before our daughters leave the hospital or anyone finds out and I need to confront this face to face with them and get it taken care of" he said.

"you're gonna leave us?" I asked "have to baby I have to put my family first right now and that means me going away for awhile and getting this done and finally proving to you that I love you and want to be with you and be with our daughters over anybody get anything in this world" he said crying. "how long will you be gone?" I asked. "I really don't know sweetheart I really don't" he said sniffing. "so tomorrow is going to be my last day with you in our daughters until I get this all taken care of" he said "I'm going to get up and go see a girls for a while and then we're going to leave and I'm going to take you out and do something special with you, the doctor said you're allowed to have sex now besides you only had a c-section see only take two weeks off I want to make love to my wife" he said. "okay baby" I said starting to cry.

he put his hand up my face and pull me into him kissing me over and over and over again. "I just wanna hold you close to me tonight if that's okay?" He asked. "of course it is baby" I said. he

pulled me into him as I laid my head on his chest and he just held me. he was breathing really heavily and I knew we had a lot on his mind all he did was hold me and run his fingers through my hair. every couple of minutes kissing the top of my head. as we just laid there Harry meet others heart beats in each other's breathing all night long. I didn't know exactly what he had planned to work he was going to do. but during the middle of the night I heard him go into the closet that was in the bedroom. I pretended like I was asleep but I rolled over and look in the closet he had his back towards me but he was stuffing things into a duffel bag.

of course he was packing some clothes but he was also packing like some knives and I think he packed his gun as well. I knew that he had these things especially being in the Marines he never told me that he had them but I knew that he had them. I heard him zip up the duffle bag as he turns a lot of the closet. I close my eyes pretending to be asleep as he crawled back into bed and laid behind me. I felt it arms wrap around me and pull me close into his chest I just started kissing the back of my neck again. "I love you so much baby I really do and I'm really sorry for all the messed up things I did but I hope once I come back you will be my loving wife again we could be the family always dreamed of" he said as he kissed my head one more time and laid his head on the pillow.

#49(bonus)

The next morning I got woken up to Andrew kissing me over and over on the back of my neck. Moving my hair to the side and kissing me again. I rolled over gently and smiled at him. I could tell he didn't get much sleep. I didn't know what he had planned but I knew it was pretty serious. And I knew it was going to be a emotionally roller coaster today if he actually did leave. "Lets go see our girls" he said. I just smiled at him and said "ok baby" as he kissed me. We got up and got dressed. And headed out towards the car. He opened the door for me which that was the first time in a while since the babies were born that he did that. He got in his side started the car and we left.

"I am going to leave you the car baby I am going to rent me a car to go back in" he said. "How will I hear from you we don't have cell phones any more" I said. "I am going to fix that today baby theres no way I am leaving without anyway of contacting you" he said. I just sighed. "You don't like this idea do you?" He asked. With a straight face I turned to him and said "Fuck no I don't". He just sighed "You don't have to cuss at me baby girl" he said. "But I have to do it no one can find out the babies have already been born" he said. "I have to take care of it" he said. "What if something happens to you...what if someone finds out and tries to come after me...and your not here" I said.

"No one is going to find out thats why I am doing this before it all comes out" he said. "It just doesn't seem that easy" I said. "Its not going to be baby but I am going to make it happen" I said. We pulled into the hospital parking lot getting out and going up to see the girls. They looked just like the day before. I just sighed looking at them to me they looked peaceful but I know to Andrew they looked like they had been suffering. We did decide on what to name the babies. I named

baby A Ariaba after my best friend I met in highschool. But since we turned 15 she moved away and we don't speak any more. Andrew named baby B Briana. He didn't say why exactly just said he always liked the name. I kinda have a feeling its more than just a name to him.

We stayed at the hospital until about 3pm I started hearing Andrew say goodbye to the babies and I couldn't hear it. I had to step out into the hallway. He was talking to them like he was never coming back and that's what scared me the most. He came out into the hallway tears in his eyes and his eyes blood shot and puffy. He picked up my hand as we walked outside. We walked to the car as we both got in. We ended up driving back to the house. We walked inside as he went into the closet and got out two cell phones. He gave me one and said "Call or text me anytime and I will answer". "How about I give you some rules?" I said. "Huh?" He asked. "How about you call me every 2 hours or I will come after you" I smiled at him.

"Is this payback?" He asked. "This is just the beginning to the payback" I said. "I figured one day I would have that coming" he said. "Oh yeah" I said. He just smiled at me and leaned forward and kissed me running his tongue in my mouth. Then sighing really deeply. "God ive missed this" he said. "What this?" I said leaning up and kissing him really softly but shoving my tongue in to his mouth harder. And then pulling away. "Mmhmm yes that baby girl" he said. "Do you forgive me yet its ok if you say no" he said. "I am getting there" I said kissing him again. "Thats better than a no" he said leaning me down on the bed kissing me harder. Since I did have a c section I was allowed to have sex just take it easy. And i knew he would.

I did love the way he made love to me it was very gentle soft and romantic. He leaned me up kissing me again pulling my shirt off and then undoing my bra and letting it fall. As he pulled the side straps down and then all the way off. Carefully kissing my shoulders making circles with his tongue. He then took off his shirt and tossed it across the floor. Sliding down my shorts and boyshorts as he laid me back down. Taking his head in between my legs. I could feel his hot breathe against my pussy lips. As he started kissing them softly licking them up and down. It felt so amazing.

I started moaning a little as he went up to my clit sucking on it lightly at first as his fingers started massaging my pussy opening. He slide his two fingers as I was already wet as they just slide in perfectly. I arched my back as he started fingering me hard and fast aa at the same time sucking on my clit. I could feel myself starting to cum as it came pretty quick and he knew it. "Thats ok baby cum on me" he s said as he removed his fingers from inside of me and shoved his face back inside of my pussy just as his tongue slide inside I screamed out as I exploded all over his face gripping the side of his head and arching my back as I did it. He continued to lick my pussy cleaning up all my cum and juices. He stood up undoing his pants and boxers sliding them both down.

He climbed back on top of me kissing my lips really softly I could taste my pussy juices on his lips

and tongue. He positioned himself in between my legs rubbing his hard cock against my pussy lips. Searching for the hole as the head of his cock pressed into my pussy. I deeply sighed as it pushed inside he just moaned softly as he pushed it in inch by inch. Kissing my neck as I had no choice but to look up at the ceiling and let my eyes roll back in my head as my legs started to shake as he picked up speed. He started kissing me again as I wrapped my legs around his waist pulling him into me as his cock went deeper inside of me. I started moaning and breathing louder as he was going deeper and harder.

.

"I am going to cum fast baby I am sorry" he moaned. "Its ok baby I am close" I said. As he started pumping faster and I could feel the goose bumps over power my legs and my body as it was over powering me. I was cumming again. He kissed me again really deeply as he arched his back and I did mine as we both moaned loudly and came together. I felt his hot cum shoot up inside of me as I felt my pussy contract around his cock cumming all over it. He leaned down and kissed me. Then looking into my eyes "I love you. I miss this" he said. I just smiled and said "Oh I love you baby. I miss this so much" as I kissed him. "Come on get dressed I want to take you some where" he said. I just smiled "Ok baby".

.

We ended up going to this beach that was about an hour away. "Remember this place baby?" He asked. I just turned to him and nodded yes. This was the beach he took me to shortly after we got married. It was very pretty and breathtaking. We got out of the car and just walked hand in hand along the beach watching the sunset. We stopped down at the dock where we sat down on the sand watching the tide roll up. I never thought in the beginning that I would love this man, be happily married to him, have kids with him. But even after all the fights I do love him and couldn't imagine my life with out him.

.

Thinking about all of this started to make me feel really sad like my heart was being broken into a million pieces. I just felt each tear fall and slide down my face then hitting the sand. "Don't cry baby I will come back" he said. "Don't go" I said barely getting the words out. "Sweetie I have to" he wrapping his arm around me. "Baby please just trust me don't go" I said. "Why baby what's wrong?" He asked. "I don't know just something bad I know it just please don't" I said just balling my eyes out. "Baby I have never seen you like this" he said. "You have seen me cry before" I said.

.

"Not like this look at you baby you are shaking uncontrollably....why are you doing that?" He said panicking. "I just am. Just please don't go" I said. "Baby oh baby I am going to be ok" he said holding me close to him. I just continued crying. "Baby please stop shaking your scaring me" he said. "Aren't you scared?" I said. "Everyone gets scared in their life" he said. "Then believe me and don't go" I said. "Please Andrew" I said. "Wow you said Andrew...you must be serious you only call me that when you are" he said.

.

"Then what do you imply that we do" he said. "I don't know but don't leave me don't leave us. I can't do it without you" I said. "What can't you do without me baby?" He asked. "Be both parents" I said. "You think something that bad is going to happen? That I don't come back" he said. I just looked at him tears and all and said "Yes". "Oh shit" he said. "But I have to go baby there's no other way I can think of. You can't go your not pregnant anymore they are not stupid. And even if you were pregnant I still wouldn't want you to go" he said. "The girls need you to stay here" I said. "And the girls also need a father" I said. "Shit baby girl I have to. And the thought of you by yourself is going to tear me apart but I made that promise to you and the babies I have to do this" he said as he kissed me.

We both had the same feeling some thing bad was going to happen. But we also both knew he had to go face them. I don't even remember the drive back to the house I was so emotionally drained that all I remember was him carrying me inside. I thought I was dreaming when I felt him kiss me a few times telling me he loved me. And to make sure I told the girls he loved them every day. But it really was him leaving. I woke up to the sun rising through the window as I rolled over and he wasn't there. I just laid there and started to cry again. Something bad was either going to happen to him or me.

MY MASTER

#50

I instantly grabbed the cell phone. There was already a text from him it said Call me when you wake up. He had already programmed his number in the phone as I hit call and called him. It just rang and rang my heart just pounding more and more hearing each ring waiting for him to answer. But he never did. The voice mail clicked on as I ended the call and hit redial as it started ringing again. One... Two...Three rings still nothing. Until the Fourth ring it picked up buying it was a lot of scuffling and then the call ended by itself. I called him again this time crying. Just hard core crying. "Baby?" He finally answered.

"Baby Sweetheart why are you crying?" He asked.

"I am scared"

"Don't be sweetie I promise I will come back"

"Why didn't you answer?"I asked.

"I guess the service is bad you only called once before this and tried to answer and I couldn't hear you" he said.

.

I just kept crying and I knew that it was breaking his heart. "Baby please stop crying" he said. "I can't help it something is going to happen" I said. He just sighed and asked "How sure are you?" He asked. "Like life or death sure" I said.. "Ok ok baby I won't go yet I will come back but you have to help me then we have to do it together" I said. "Ok baby just please come back" I said. "I am going to turn around baby I have never seen or heard you like this and I can't put that on you" he said. "Thank you baby" I said. "What are husband's for" he said. "I am about 2 hours away going to take me a little bit" he said. "Ok" I said. "Why don't you get cleaned up and dressed and meet me at the car rental place by the airport its right up the street and we can talk about this more" he said. "Ok baby" I said.

.

"I love you so much baby and I know we have had a few bad things happen to us but I couldn't imagine my life without you. I just need you here right now and I know we will get through everything together"

"We will sweet heart .Now dry your tears your hubby is coming back"

"But its 8 oclock now I should be there by 10"

"Ok baby" I said

"I love you baby girl so much"

"I love you baby"

"Ok baby I will see you soon"

"Ok baby bye" I said. "Bye my love" I said as we both hung up. I couldn't describe the feeling I was having about what was going to happen. But him being by himself right now wasn't a good thing. And I will admit it our babies need a father and I didn't want to raise them alone. I got up and took a shower getting dressed into some jeans and a tank top. I fixed my hair the way he likes it and went out to the car. It was 9:45 and we should be getting there about the same time. I circled the parking lot as I got there getting a parking spot up front so I could see him when he got there. I picked up the phone just as it started to ring.

.

"Where are you baby?" He asked

"I am already here"

"I am about to pull in" he said. As he finished saying that I look up to see his little blue car pull in. It

drove up next to our car as I looked over and it was him. I flung off my seat belt and opened the car door just as he opened his to him smiling at me. I just bear hugged him. "I am sorry baby I left I should have listened to you last night. I had that same feeling too just wasn't hoping it was for real but shit you felt it too" he said hugging me tighter. "Next time believe me" I said as I gripped in to him harder. "I will sweet heart I will" he said. "Let me go turn the car back in baby so we can go somewhere and talk" he said.

I let go of him as he walked inside. He wasn't gone but 5minutes when I saw him come out and I just ran jumping into his arms as he caught me. Wrapping my legs around him burying my face into his shoulder. " I think we should tell my sister baby and you and I go handle it" he said. "Ok baby" I said. He put me down as we both got into the car. He dialed his sister's store number.

He told me once before tbat he always memorized his sister phone number. "Hey its Andrew...I need you to come out to beach city today....well I am sorry didn't call you sooner but the twins were born and they aren't progressing much and we just need you here" he said. "Alright see you soon" he said as he hung up. "Shes pissed we didn't tell her but her more concern right now is the babies" I just said ok as we just kept kissing each other. We got into the car and drove over to the hospital.

.We got to the hospital and waited for his sister outside. I know she is going to be massive pissed we didn't tell her. She came into the parking lot and pulled up next Andrews side of the car. I looked over at her and she was just shaking her head as she got out. I walked over to the other side as she got out. She immediately asked Andrew "How old are they?" . Andrewbjust bowed his head and said "2 weeks old".

"Are you fucking serious? Why did you keep it all a secret?" She asked. "We didn't want anyone to know yet just in case" he said. "Just in case what?" She said. "The babies are girls" I said "And I haven't really gotten us out of the shit hole yet" he said. "Your shitting me right...that's it Andrew I am taking your wife and your going to get it the fuck done. We can stay up here so we can be near the girls" she said.

"That's why I called you I don't want her alone while I do this" he said. "At least you are thinking in that part" she said. I picked up Andrews hand and squeeze it he knew I didn't want him to go I guess he only came back to get his sister down here to be with me. "Well let me see my niece's" she said. We walked inside to where the girls were and she just stood over them putting her hand over her mouth and cried. It was hard seeing the girls especially having so much stuff coming out of them but everyday they do start to look better. "Can we talk outside?" He asked me.

"Yeah baby" I said. As we left his sister there with the girls and went out in the hallway. " I asked her to come because you need someone with you. I shouldn't of asked you to help me this



morning that was wrong of me. I got us in this I am going to get us out. You need to stay with the girls that way if something does happen. They at least have you" he said. "But they need you too" I said. "I know baby and I promise I will come back just don't know when" he said. "Just promise me you want come after me if you start getting a bad feeling" he said. "I can't promise that" I said.

"I know gotta love my stubborn wife" he said. "But I am your wife" I said. "Always baby" he said. As we just hugging each other in the hallway. I knew I had to let him do this rather I liked it or not it was best for our family. "When are you going to leave?" I asked. "Right now" he whispered. As I just gripped on to him tighter. He kissed the top of my head a few times and pulled my hands out from around him. Looking at me straight in the eyes. "I love you so much baby and I love our daughters to death. I will come home baby I promise" he said. "I believe you" I said. "I hope so baby girl" he said kissing me.

"I love you baby" I said. "I love you my love" he said as he kissed me one more time and turned and walked away. I watched him walk to the end of the hallway and press the button for the elevator. It dinged as it opened. He turned and looked at me blew me a kiss and mouthed I love you. I said I love you baby as he stepped on the elevator. I walked back into the room where his sister and the girls were. She wrapped her arm around me and held me. "He will make it happen he loves you and the babies too much" she said. "I know" I said. As we both just stood over the girls watching them.

MY MASTER

#51

it was later on in the evening and his sister and I return to our house that was 5 minutes from the hospital.all I could do was lay in bed and just hope that he will come back soon.but I just have this feeling I had that I knew that it will take longer than a day to get it all worked out.I still had a very bad feeling about it and it was just a matter of time before I could hear from him again.I tried texting him and calling him but he didn't respond and I was getting more nervous about it.all I could do was just lay there holding his pillow which smelled just like him and just imagine that he was next to me but it didn't work.

I knew that I needed my husband but I also knew that he had to go to get this shit taken care of..I guess I had fallen asleep and I woke up and it was a middle of the night I look at my phone and it

was 3 a.m. and there was not a single text message or call from him. I decided to try calling him again maybe you would actually answer. it rang about 3 times and he finally did answer

"Baby" he said.

"Baby where are you?" I asked.

"Your father's house" he said.

"What happened?" I asked.

"Hes very pissed and lets just say I got punished for it" he said.

"What? What happened?" I said.

"He already knew baby he already knew" he sounded really disoriented and out of it.

"Baby just promise me you will always love me" he said.

"You know I love you." I said.

"My past is coming back to haunt me baby girl and I am sorry" he said.

"What are you talking about?" I asked. "I am just sorry baby just know that I am sorry" he said.

He started sounding like he was out of it like drugged or something.

"Baby listen to me" I said.

"Yeah baby" he said.

"Get your self away from my father" I said.

"I wish I knew how. I am stuck and can't" he said.

"Just please remember I love you and the girls so much. Their daddy loves them so much" he said.

I couldn't help but to start crying just listening to him he was like begging for his life over the phone and telling me his last will and testament. it was really hard hearing all this but I didn't know what else to do but to sit there and listen to him. he told me to tell the girls that he loved them and wish

he could be there for them right now but he couldn't. he kept talking out of his ass like he was honestly dying or something in that he would never see me or the girls ever again.

.  
it was so heartbreaking to hear but I didn't know what else to do to tell him that I love him and let him talk.

"Baby?" He asked.

"Yes baby" I said.

"When the girls are released run away with them" he said.

"What about you?" I asked.

"Just protect them" he said.

"Baby stop talking like that" I said.

"It's the truth. You are my everything always remember that and I will always be with you" he said.

.."Baby please stop talking like that. You made a promise to me to our girls" I said.

"Just do it baby. Promise me you will?".

I could barely get it out but I did..

"I promise" I said.

"That's my girl" he said.

"I will find you when everything is in the clear" he said.

"Your going to be gone that long?" I asked.

"Maybe" he said.

"Why?" I asked.

"Like I said my past has caught up with me and I don't know when I am coming back" he said.

I just started crying more and more.

"I have to go baby" he said.

"No baby" I said.

"I am sorry I will have to turn the phone off and call you when I can" he said.

"No baby don't go" I said.

"I am sorry sweetie I love you. Tell the girls I love them for me" he said. I just started crying harder.

"Tell me you love me baby" he said. I barely got it out but I said "I love you so much baby".

"Thank you my love you will always be on my mind don't ever forget it" he said.

"I love you sweet heart bye my love" he said as I was still crying and said

"I love you bye baby" as I heard the phone end the call. I tried calling him back but it went straight to voicemail so that means he automatically turns its own all for me hung up. I just set there and cried I didn't know what else to do honestly had no idea what my husband was going to return and what he could be doing right now. or let alone what he had to do claiming his password coming back to haunt him apparently it was affecting him in our family that bad. Plus him being at my father's house that mean my father knows about his past and is using it against him. I honestly had to figure out what was in his past and the only person that would know would be his sister.

.  
. .  
.

#52( bonus)

.

ONE YEAR LATER

.

I laid awake staring at the ceiling there's not a day goes by that I don't think about my husband. I never did get any confirmation that he was alive or dead or anything ever happened to him. but I always kept hope that he was alive he was thinking of me always as I was always thinking about him every day. everyday I did call the cell phone he had but I always went to voicemail he never called me again after the last conversation we had which made me think that something bad accident happened to them but I always kept hoping.

.

it had been a year to the day almost that he had left and everyday I dreamed of him walking through the door and being with me again. there were times that I was dreaming so vividly that I'd wake up and just imagine him standing in front of me then I would blink my eyes then image of him

was gone until then I realize it was just a dream he was not there. I miss everything about him his eyes his deep green eyes to get stared at me I could see the love in them for me. the way he would hold me at night the way I could feel him kissing me throughout the night just random kisses that made me just feel at ease and he was holding me close through the whole night.

I miss his smile the way he would just randomly smile at me and then wink, the way he would just smile and say hi at me knowing that I was his and that he was mine for the rest of our life. I honestly just miss everything about him. as the day went on as i started giving up hope that I would never see my husband again but I honestly lost hope at one point in time that I would never see him again. even if it was just for one night let alone just one more text from him I would be happy but I never got that. I never got any of it to the point that I was really depressed for a good few months. to the point that I was clenching my phone and laying in bed just waiting for him to call me text me or so.

I woke up to a dark figure standing above me I didn't want to wake up from this dream because in my dream I knew it was him but I didn't want to snap back into reality I knew that he would be gone. I felt the presence of this figure walk a little closer toward me, start itching close by close to staring at me but I didn't want to wake up I didn't wanna lose the sight of him. I heard the figure sighed as I didn't think it knew what to do its just stood there and stared at me.

It was definitely him in my dream but I just wanted to lay there and see what he would do in my dream. I felt his hand run up my leg up my stomach into my hand. I felt his hand pick up my hand and bring it to his lips and kiss it. his kisses were just like I remember the very soft and gentle even though he was kissing my hand I still loved it. I felt the way of this figure sit down on the bed next to me is staring at me but I knew if I open my eyes it would all be a dream that he would be gone. "Baby" I heard the figure whisper at me. I couldn't help but to just lay there and listen to him because I knew in my heart this was all a dream. "Baby wake up" the figure said again.

I actually prayed in my mind that if I open my eyes he would actually be there except I kept saying over in my mind please let him be here please let him be there not be gone this time when I wake up. "Wake up my love" the figure said as I felt his lips on mine. I knew from that kiss it was not a dream I had dreamed so many times of kissing him and I knew when that figure kiss me it was a real kiss from him. I just open my eyes and lunged at him as he caught me and I bury my face in his shoulders and cried. "I told you I would come back" he said. I just kept crying as I felt his arms wrapped around me and pull me closer to him and hold me tight." I am home baby girl oh God I have missed you so much" he kept saying.

he pulled away and just looked at me running his hands up the side of my face like he was memorizing my face are we living being with me. "Your just as beautiful as I remembered" he said. "I love you" I said. "I love you baby girl very much" he said. I just smiled as he leaned in and kissed me. Running his tongue softly in my mouth and back out kissing my lips softly again.

"Where are the girls?" He asked. I just sighed deeply and he knew "No when?" He asked. "About 2 weeks after you left I am so sorry baby" I said as he started crying and breathing heavy. "What happened?" He asked.

"First it was Ariana her heart rate dropped and she stopped breathing and they tried to bring her back but she left. And it wasn't even 5 minutes later Briana did the same. It was like they couldn't leave each other" I said starting to cry myself. He just bear hugged me and cried in my shoulder "My girls its all my fault" he said. "No its not baby" he said. I just let him cry it out for a little bit and just holding him close to me as he was screaming over the passing of our daughters. I pulled away and looked at him..."Where are they buried you had a funeral right?" He asked. "Of course and they are next to your dad, your sister thought it would be a good idea" I said.

He just nodded and hugged me again.."I need to tell you something" I said. "Yes baby" he said. "Remember the last day we had sex before we went to the beach?" I asked. "Yes" he said. "Well about 2 months later I found out I was pregnant" I said "What?!" He said. "Yeah I had a son we have a son" I said. "No way baby" he said. "Yes really" I said. "How old is he then?" He asked. "Almost 3 months old he was born 2 weeks early though" I said "But is he ok?" He asked. I just kinda smiled and said "Yes hes perfectly fine" I said. "Well where is he?" He asked. I got out of bed taking his hand. "Come on hes asleep in his room." I said..He took my hand as we walked out into the room next to ours.

I opened the door as he was sound asleep. We walked up to the crib as our son was sound asleep. Andrew just sighed and smiled at him. "What's his name?" He asked. "Andrew" I said. "You named him after me" he said smiling. "Yes baby I did". He just smiled and started moving his fingers like he wanted to pick him up. "Its ok baby pick him up" I said. He just reached down and picked him up as the baby started to wake up and cry. "Shhh baby boy I am your dad there's no need to cry" he said as he kissed his forehead. The baby calmed down and stopped crying and opened his eyes looking up at Andrew.

"I am your daddy. Gosh you look just like your mom" he said. "We will get to know each other more tomorrow you need your sleep" Andrew said to the baby as he was starting to fall back asleep in Andrew's arms. He kissed him on the forehead and laid him back down in the crib. He took my hand as we left the baby to go back asleep. Closing the door softly and going back to our room. We set down on the bed and just kissed each other over and over and over again. that's honestly what both of us wanted to do was just kiss each other. "I hate to ask but are we in the clear?" I asked. "Theres one more thing I have to do" he said. "What's that baby?" I asked. "Kill your father" he said.

I just couldn't help but to keep looking at him and smiling as he was doing the same. He looked pretty much like he did the last time I saw him. He did have a little beard going on looks like he hadn't shaved in probably a few weeks. He probably lost a few pounds especially in his face but

other than that he looked the same. "God I missed you so much" I said. "I missed you baby I honestly thought I would never see you again" he said.

.

"I know the feeling" I said. As he leaned in and kissed me.

"I love you" I said

"You never stopped loving me?" He asked.

"No way" I said.

"Good I was hoping you never did or let alone forget about me" he said.

"I could never do that baby" I said.

"What happened anyway?" I asked.

"Can we please talk about it tomorrow I just want to be with you tonight?" He said.

"Of course baby" I said. He leaned in and kissed me as I wrapped my arms around his neck embarrassing his long over due kisses. He leaned in and whispered in my ear "Can I make love to you?" He asked. "MmMHmm" I said. He leaned me backwards as I laid down on my back as he got on top of me. He started breathing heavy and kissing my neck. Lifting up my shirt I wasn't wearing a bra or anything as he started kissing down my neck to my chest. He laid his head down on my chest hearing my heart beat as I ran my fingers through his hair.

.

He looked up at me and kissed me again. Sitting up taking his shirt off then sliding down my boxers I had on. He sat up undid his belt then his jeans and taking them off and throwing them across the room. He slide down his boxers as his cock was already throbbing. He leaned down and kissed me sliding his tongue in my mouth really softly. Tasting him again was something honestly I thought would never happen. He whispered in my ear "I know I am going to cum fast I will apologize now".

.

"Baby I know" I said. He just smiled and kissed me pressing his cock up against my pussy as I spread ny legs wider for him. He slide his cock up and down my lips getting it wetter than it already was. He gently massaged his tongue with mine as he pushed the head of his cock in me. Going inside inch by inch feeling how good it actually felt. Remembering like it was yesterday that we had sex last time. He started moving it in and out a little faster still kissing me really softly. I think we both knew this was going to be quick but we just stayed in that position while he was moving in and out of me faster. I started moaning louder as I could feel my climax hitting and taking over me. I arched my back as he pulled me up a little by running his hands up my back as I wrapped mine

around his shoulders pulling him in deeper inside of me.

.  
I couldn't hold on much longer as I gripped his back as I moaned loud feeling my pussy contract around his dick and releasing myself all over him. He laid me back down and kissed me again then moving to the side of my neck and saying "I am cumming baby girl" he said as he looked up and saw his eyes roll back in to his head as he grunted loudly and I felt his cum being shot shoot up inside of me. He leaned down and kissed me over and over again. "I love you so much baby thank you for believing in me and never forgetting about " . "I could never forget about you baby" I said.. as we kissed one more time.

.  
I just smiled at him as I could still feel his cock twitching and throbbing inside of me. He laid down next to me as I laid my head on his chest. "I am surprised I didn't wake him up being that loud" he said. I just kinda giggled. "He can sleep through anything" I said. "That's good " he said. I just laid there on his chest he was running his fingers through my hair. It was so relaxing. Just hearing him and touch I knew that he was be there . It was very peaceful until we both fell asleep holding as we fell asleep.

.  
.  
.  
.  
MY MASTER

.  
.  
#53  
.  
.

I woke up in the middle of the night still in a dream that he was back. I felt his hands start running up my back as I guess I had rolled over and he was lying behind me. I just sighed putting my hand on top of his as I felt him start to kiss the back of my neck.

"I love you baby girl" he whispered

"I love you sweetie" I said as he kept kissing my neck.

We I guess had fallen asleep still naked from what he had done before we went to sleep. I rolled over and looked at him as he was just staring into my eyes. He did have this sad look about him. Which I know he was still grieving about the loss of our daughters which I was still too. I am not going to lie it was hard dealing with that without him plus finding out that I was pregnant again and not knowing if he was going to come back.

.  
When I went into my depressive stage I laid in bed for a good two months only came out just to go to my doctor appointments and went back to bed as soon as I got home. His sister had to come over and pretty much snap me out of it for the safety of our baby.

"Baby?" he asked



“Yes baby” I said

“Tell me everything” he said

“What do you want to know?” I asked

“From when I left until now tell me everything that happened. I want to know, I know you already told me a little bit out what happened to our girls but you were pregnant and you gave birth. A lot of things happened that I missed and want to know about” he said

I just sighed and sat up.

.

“Can I at least get a cup of coffee we might be here awhile” I said

He just smiled at me as we both got up and went into the kitchen. I still stayed in the house he got that was 5 minutes from the hospital. I knew that if he did come back this is the first place he would look and I would be here.

I started the coffee maker as I felt his arms wrap around me.

“We do make beautiful babies” he said

“That we do baby” I said

“I just went and checked on him your right he sleeps through everything” he said

“Oh yeah he was sleeping through the whole night about a week after he was born” I said

“Wow that’s crazy” he said

“Tell me about it. I was shocked the first night he did. I kept waking up every hour to check on him and he would always be just sound asleep” I said

He just smiled at me. I knew that he always wanted a son but I know it is heart breaking finding out about our girls the way that he did.

.

I poured us a cup of coffee. It was about 5 am and I knew that the baby would be waking up around 7 like he always did every morning so we had a little time to talk. We walked into the living room and sat on the couch. He faced me as I crossed my legs and just took a few sips of the coffee.

“Ok are you ready?” I asked

“Yes baby” he said

I just sighed and started talking.

“Well the day after you left I am not going to lie I was a complete wreck and cried a lot. I knew that I had to pull myself together at least for the sake of our girls. Your sister stayed me until about a month ago. But anyway every day we went to the hospital to be with them, I told me every day several times a day that I loved them and that their daddy did too. I could tell a couple days before it happened that something was going to happen to at least Ariana, she started losing a lot of color in her face and wasn’t looking that good. And the doctors knew it to. They confronted me about it and told me her chances were fading more and more and she probably wouldn’t make it past another week.

.

The day it happened your sister and I had just gotten there we weren't there maybe 5 minutes when all of the alarms starting going off to the machines and her heart rate dropped within a matter of seconds. She stopped breathing all together. They had opened the incubator for the first time and actually took her out and started to save her but she faded way too quickly. I held her in my arms and kissed her over and over telling her that it was alright that she had left us that we still loved her very much. It wasn't but about 5 minutes later the same thing happened to Briana. The doctors were actually shocked that it happened to her because she didn't have any signs of anything wrong with her.

I actually had a nurse tell me that she believed in the saying that twins feel each other's pain and she was probably feeling what her sister was feeling and just wanted to be with her so she let go too. I do believe that she was right it was like they didn't want to be a part from each other. I held them both for a while until they pretty much made me give them to the doctors to help prepare for everything. I told them each that they are loved very much by their mommy and daddy and just because their daddy wasn't there he still loved you very much."

I had to take a minute to catch my breath it is still hard talking about our daughters let alone reliving what had happened but I knew that he wanted to know everything that happened so I had to suck it up and tell him. He had tears rolling down his face as I did as well. I picked up his hands into mine and looked into his eyes and continued talking

"Your sister thought it would be a good idea to bury them next to your father. And I understand if you don't want to go visit them, it is hard for me to do it too, I think I have only been out there twice since it happened. I know that your sister goes out there a lot and she had to go with me the two times that I did go. After all this happened I laid in bed for a few weeks just crying over the loss and the fact that you were not here with me to hold me and comfort me. I replayed in my mind so many times how I was going to tell you but I knew that the words would just come out when I would see you again. About a month and half after all this happened I started getting sick. I figured it was just signs of the depression I was in, your sister convinced me to go see a doctor and I did. It had come to find out that I was pregnant and we made a baby the afternoon before you left.

I was shocked, scared, sad and happy all at the same time. I knew that this would be one hell of a surprise for you. But I knew you would be happy about it. I knew that I had to make myself healthy for this baby. There was always just one. Every doctor appointment I would ask the doctor to make sure there was just one baby and he always assured me there was just one. I didn't want to know the sex of the baby just in case you came back while I was pregnant and I didn't know if you want to know or keep it a secret until the baby was born. I am going to tell you the truth the first couple months I was pregnant I lay in bed and clenched my phone hoping to just hear from you and I never did.

.  
Your sister had to drag me out of bed and pretty much feed me every day and make me take a bath. But after a while I knew that you would kick my ass you came home and found me like this so I snapped out of it and started doing things for the good of our baby. Your sister came with me to every doctor appointment. Honestly when my third trimester hit it was actually going by really quickly. And what scared me the most hitting the 6th month of pregnancy because that's when the girls were born and it scared me to death it was going to happen to them as well. It was about two weeks before my due date when I was sitting outside on the patio with your sister and I stood up and my water broke.

.  
I actually thought to myself that I was happy the baby stayed in this long and when the baby was born I would be able to take the baby home shortly after. She took me to the hospital and by the time I had gotten there I was only 2 cm dilated. I was in labor for 27 hours. Until I thought there was no way I was going to get this baby out because I was so emotional, physically drained to the point I could barely push. It took me about an hour to push him out. When I finally did he came out screaming and crying like no other. He does have a set of lungs on him and he will let you know it. I just cried because you had missed the birth of our son.

.  
Your sister was the one who cut the cord and held him for the first time. When she handed him to me she told me that I had a son. I cried even more because when he was first born he looked a lot like you. I see a lot of you in him every day. I knew that you missed one of the happiest important days in his life and it was so heart breaking. The baby and I stayed in the hospital for 3 days. They let him come home with me; even though he was born early he came out perfectly fine and healthy. He weighed 7 lbs 3 oz and 19 inches long. He does have pretty long feet and legs.

.  
His eyes are green like yours. They finally turned green about a couple weeks ago. Your sister and I both thought he would have blue like mine because they stayed his greyish blue color for a long time. Until one morning I went to go get him and he was just looking up at me with these green eyes. I couldn't help but to smile because he was starting to look like you more and more each day. He still does. He has your smile. Your nose and ears. The only thing really he has of mine are these little dimples on his chin that he gets when he smiles. Your sister had brought over some baby pictures of you and you two could be twins. He favors you almost identically."

.  
I just stopped talking as he was crying yet smiling at the same time. He squeezed my hand and leaned in and kissed me.

"I am sorry I missed all of that" he said

"I know you are baby" I said

"I will make it up to you and him" he said

"I know baby I know" I said as we just hugged each other. Just held on to each other tight, honestly as tight as possible.

“Why did my sister move out?” he asked

“I asked her too. I thought it would be a good idea for me and the baby to have some alone time. She actually agreed she thought that I needed to heal some more but by myself “ I said

“Does she know your back?” I asked

“No” he said

“When I got back into town this was the first place I went to. I was hoping well praying you were still here. I saw my sister’s car in the driveway so I knew that you were here” he said

“Yeah since you took our car she has been letting me use hers. She got a new one” I said

“Figures” he said smiling

“Are you going to tell her?” I asked

“I will later on I think maybe give her a heart attack and just walk into her shop?!” he said smiling

“Oh my god you are going to kill her” I said

He just smiled at me and kissed me again.

“I am sorry baby I just miss kissing you. I dreamed everyday about kissing you. Feeling your touch on me and just being able to hold you again” he said

“It is ok baby I understand I have missed you so much that I dreamed about you every night” I said

“You promise you never stopped loving me?” he asked

“I never stopped loving you baby” I said

“I think that we being apart showed me how much I do love you, rather we fight, argue, and disagree its nothing compared to you not being here” I said

“I know baby. I felt like an idiot the whole time not being able to tell you how much I love you every day that I was here or fighting with you over something stupid” he said

“I know I don’t want us to fight like we did last year. I just want you and us to be happy like we were when we first got married” I said

“I want that too baby” he said

“Then we will make it happen” I said

“Yes we will baby” he said

As we kissed again he leaned me back on the couch and laid on top of me just kissing me over and over. Moving along my neck just little kisses with his tongue. I really missed the little kisses he would make. I missed it a lot actually. I couldn’t help but to moan when he started moving down my chest. He just sighed deeply.

He positioned himself in between my legs I felt his bulge underneath his boxers along my lips. It was getting harder and wanted to rip through his boxers and inside of me. I honestly couldn’t help that I wanted him again. It had been a year and he wanted me just as bad. He didn’t even take his boxers off he pulled his cock out through the hole and slide my panties to the side as he pushed his cock inside of my pussy. I arched my back and moaned loud as he started going fast. He gripped my shoulders as he roughly kissed me a little, sliding his tongue in my mouth as I wrapped my legs around his waist. I knew that this was going to be a quickie as well but I didn’t care. I wanted him right then and there and he wanted me too. He started going faster as I could feel his cock hitting the back of my vagina wall just smacking against it and being yanked right back out of

me and thrusting right back in.

I could feel my pussy tighten around his hard dick as I was getting wetter as it was just easily sliding in and out. I could feel him start to cum as well. And he knew that I knew he was about to. I started moaning louder as he was pumping harder. He leaned down pressing his forehead against mine as I put my hands on the side of his face and moaned loud as I felt myself explode all over him. He kissed me one more as I heard him grunt in the kiss as he exploded inside of me. He leaned down and rested his head on my shoulder whispering in my ear

"I love you baby girl" he said

"I love you baby" I said

We just laid there for a minute as we both catching our breath. Until we heard the baby start to cry as we both busted out laughing.

"I got to say good timing little buddy" I said

"You got that right" he said

As he pulled himself out of me as I could see my cum and his all over his dick and actually some on his boxers.

"I will go get him if you want to change" I said to him

"Alright I will back but I want to feed him" he said

"If that's what he wants?" he asked

"Oh yeah that's what he wants he can put down some food" I said laughing getting up and walking down the hallway to the babies room. I heard Andrew go into our room as I guess he was changing clothes.

I went and picked up little man and brought him into the kitchen while I prepared him a bottle. I heard Andrew come up behind me as I turned around. All he did was change his boxers and put on a T-shirt. He just smiled at me and at the baby.

"Here baby" I said

As I gave him the baby. He picked up the baby really slowly and carefully like he didn't want to drop him or that he honestly didn't know how to hold a baby. I might actually be right on that one that last night when he met our son for the first time that might have been the first time ever he held a baby. He just smiled really big as little man had started to calm down he was that type of baby that enjoyed just being held.

"Hey buddy I don't know if you remember me from last night but I am your daddy" he said to him. The baby just stared up at him with this look on his face and then smiled at him.

"Did he just smile at me?" Andrew asked me

"Yes baby he did. He knows you're his dad" I said

"Really?" He asked

"He's not stupid baby" I laughed as we walked into the living room

Andrew sat down on the couch with the baby as I handed him the bottle. He started feeding him and just smiled at him. He was so much in love with him and he had only met him a few hours ago.

"You are right he does look a lot like me" he said

“Yes he does baby” I said

“Why did you name him after me?” he asked

“For that reason he is your mini me” I said

He just busted out laughing.

“Thank you baby it does mean a lot” he said

“You’re welcome I would hope you would like it and didn’t mind I named him after you” I said

“Oh of course not baby” he said

I just sat there and watched them bond with each other. It was honestly one of those moments that was truly breath taking to watch. Little man knew instantly that Andrew was his dad and them two bonded like a father and son should have. I was really happy that he got to meet his dad, there was times when I thought it was never going to happen. But I knew he had to go away from his family and do what he had to do. I just didn’t think neither one of us knew it would take that long, but he is back now.

“I am never going to leave you guys again” he said looking over at me

“I hope not baby” I said

“I swear its never going to happen again” he said

“Are you ready to talk about it yet?” I asked

“Yeah let him finish this bottle and that way I can put him in the bassinet thing over there and I can look at you and tell you everything” he said

“Ok baby I am not going to rush you” I said

“Its ok baby I want to tell you everything baby” he said

“Ok baby” I said as he turned his head back down to the baby. And kissed him on the forehead.

Watching him just admiring our son.

.

.

.

MY MASTER

.

.

.

I couldn’t help but to just watch him all the time now. I loved him very much and the last year was honestly a nightmare. I never thought that he would honestly come back. Just to see his face again being able to kiss him and touch him was like a dream in itself. But I knew that he was back home and it was just a matter of time before he would tell me everything that had happened. I do think that he must have accomplished a lot just for the simple fact that he was gone for a year.

.

He got up off the couch kissing the baby and laying in the bassinet. He walked into the kitchen and came back with some more coffee and sat down in front of me. He was still wearing his boxers and plain white t-shirt as he sipped the coffee and turned to me.

"I am sorry that I had to go baby. I really am. I never thought that it would have taken this long. It killed me every day that I was away from you. It really did. Plus the fact that the girls were there in the hospital and I didn't know what was going on with them or you it was a nightmare. I guess I better start from the beginning of what happened and for the simple fact that I wasn't able to contact you in anyway. The day that I left the hospital from you I drove straight to your father's house. That was the only place I knew to go to fix everything. I stormed into his house like I guess I owned the place and I was serious so the fact that he would take me serious. I had already left you and the girls and I wanted to get back to you as fast as I could. I was confronted by two guys at the front door.

.  
It was like he was expecting me or something. I got taken into your father's office after I was punched in the face a few times. I don't like people getting into my face and you know that and I tried to swing at them and well got caught in something else. Your father was sitting at his desk with this cocky grin on his face that I honestly just wanted to smack off of him. But I had remembered what Zack had told me and not be a jack ass to him. He told me that he had already known about the girls being born and started talking down to me like I was nothing. He apparently had had someone following us and the fact the girls were born and I didn't tell no one made it worse. He said that he had a feeling that I was going to show up here eventually and well I did. He started going on about how you gave birth to girls and that I knew the consequences of that. I honestly begged him not to touch you or the girls. That's when he started laughing and told me that I didn't have any other choice. He told me that eventually you would be taken out of the picture and the girls would be too. I told him that I would do anything for that not to happen.

.  
That I had already warned him that I wanted to leave and quit that he knew it was coming and this all wasn't such a fucking surprise. He started doing that laugh again that was sending me over the edge. He pretty much said that he would hold off on getting you and the girls if I did him a favor. I honestly didn't have a choice. He started telling me about how he knew about my military background and experience and the fact of that I used to do for him before I met you. I mean come on baby look how I found you. Sorry to say that but I was tracking you for a long time before I actually met you face to face. He started going into detail about how he was going to set up another society a sub group as you would say. And he already had some "Masters" to run it but he needed slaves for the masters. That he wanted me to find them and the more I found well the more time I was given that you would be left alone.

.  
I agreed to it just for the simple fact that I didn't want no one to hurt you or the girls. Plus he added the little comment about how not only if I didn't do this for him that my wife and daughters would be punished and that remember when I killed that guy and well the video camera recorded it all and well he threatened to turn me into the police, because apparently all they did was throw his body in the ocean. But it was later found. But just so that you or the girls wouldn't be touched or bothered I agreed to it. I pretty much for that year went around to sleazy bars, hotels shit like that finding girls that could be trained into slaves. I did keep in contact with your father and he would

always tell me that nothing was wrong with you or the girls so I just kept going.

Now that I come to think of it since you told me about the girls passing away it does make sense because after about a month being gone he stopped talking about the girls only about you. He would tell me that you were ok. And when I did ask about my daughters he would change the subject. I honestly thought that he had done something to them just for the fact he wouldn't talk about them. I really don't think he knew you got pregnant again baby just because a couple months after that he stopped talking about you all together. And when I did ask about you he would just change the subject and threaten me some more about how I needed more girls for him."

I just looked at him. I honestly didn't know what to say. That my father was making my husband find girls for him. Let alone find slaves for his idiot cult.

"I do want to tell you something. Since I had to go find girls I did have to pretend to like them and show interest in them" he said

"Did you sleep with any of them?" I asked

"No I never did I swear but I did kiss a few" he said

I just looked at him with my eyes popping out.

"I am sorry baby. I had to I didn't want nothing to happen to you" he said picking up my hand.

I had to change the subject I didn't want to talk about that any more.

"So whats left how did you finally get home?" I asked

"I finally got about 50 girls for him. It took me a long ass time. But one day your father emailed me and told me he was pretty much satisfied and that my work had been done. I emailed him back asking about you and the girls and he just said that I had to find out for myself. Which it kind of makes sense maybe he does know that we have a son and us having a son they can't do harmful shit to you or me anymore. But I asked him does this mean that I am done, and he replied that is still your choice. I honestly didn't know what to think about that comment or the simple fact I didn't know if you were ok. But I did know that I needed to get home to you and find you some how. He said

"So you are telling me for the past year you were hooking up with girls to please my father. Score."

I said being a little smart ass about it.

"I didn't hook up with any of them. I just made them think I was interested in them" he said

I honestly just rolled my eyes that was really fucked up that my husband was helping my father like that.

"So what are you going to do now?" I asked

"Well I got in contact with Zack and in 3 weeks it's on a Saturday there is an event at your father's house and well we are both going to go and I am going to kill the son of a bitch" he said

"Do you really think it would work?" I asked

"Oh it's going to work" he said

"So why couldn't you contact me?" I asked



“Your father threatened me. I actually got an email from him a few days after I left. It was actually a picture of the girls in the hospital. He took it himself. So that means he was near our daughters. That he told me I couldn’t contact you or anyone or these girls would suffer for it” he said

“So I agreed” he continued

“Don’t ever think that I was trying to cheat on you on purpose or that I enjoyed any of it. I didn’t. I dreamed of kissing you every night feeling your body next to mine. I actually start hallucinating after a while that I could see you but really couldn’t. I was so depressed that I actually had Zack mail me some anti-depressants so that I could stay focused on what your father wanted me to do and get home to you faster. I just didn’t think it would take that long to do any of it. And I knew you were ok not just by your ass hole of a father telling me I never believed a single word he said. But Zack had checked on you a few times. Which I wonder why he never told you were pregnant? I mean you had to of started showing after a while and that part I don’t get. But I am supposed to meet up with him the day after tomorrow. Well I actually need to get in contact with him and tell him just to come over here.” He said

“Why do you want to talk to him for?” I asked

“He is actually getting out too babe” he said

“And you believe it?” I asked

“Yes just because I have known him for a long time even before I joined this fucked up situation” he said

“If you say so, I still don’t believe anything anyone from that fucking group says or does” I said

“Not even your mother?” he asked

“No not really” I said

He just kind of raised his eye brow at me.

“I am not going to lie I have talked to her a few times since you have been gone” I said

“Really?” he asked

“Yes we talk through emails” I said

“Did you tell her about our son?” he asked

“No, I didn’t want no one to know about him. The only person who does that I know of is your sister” I said

“Ok, did you tell her about the girls?” he asked

“No she already knew that’s how the email started she was contacting me to tell me she was sorry to hear about them” I said

“I didn’t go into great detail about everything just in case she was passing information around to someone else. Just because her and I had that little moment a while back doesn’t mean I fully trust her” I said

“Do you still trust me?” he asked

“I do. Just for the simple fact that I knew you had to do what you had to do to protect me and our girls. And you had to leave. I understand that but I just wish it wouldn’t of taken that long” I said

“I know baby I know” he said

“I do got something for you” I said getting up off the couch

I walked back to the bedroom and got a DVD out of the closet. I walked back into the living room

as he was still sitting on the couch.

"Here" I said handing it to him

"What's this?" he asked

"The birth of your son" I said

"You taped it for me?" he asked

"I figured you would want to see it one day, I know it's not the same but it would help maybe a little bit" I said

"Will you watch it with me?" he asked

I just shook my head yes as he got up and put the DVD in the DVD player. I grabbed the remote off the coffee table as he walked back over and sat down next to me. Wrapping his arm me and pulling me closer to him. Kissing my forehead.

"Baby?" I asked him

"Yes sweetheart?" he asked

"Don't leave me again" I said

"I would have to be killed before I left you again" he said

As I felt his lips kiss the top of my head as I pressed play to watch the movie.

.  
. .  
. .

MY MASTER

.  
.

#55

.  
.

We both laid there holding each other as we watched the birth of our son. I could hear his heart beating faster as I just closed my eyes. We were both silent as I could hear his sister's voice coming from the TV "Come on sweetie you can do it. I can see the baby's head". I was so physically drained that day I honestly didn't know how I pushed him out. His sister was the one that video recorded it all. I still laid there with my eyes closed, feeling his hands grip around me tighter, as I heard "Oh my God how are you doing this?" His sister saying. I heard myself say "Not as easy as it looks".

.

I felt Andrew chuckle a little bit after we both heard me say it. I heard the doctor say "One more push and your going to be a mom". I heard myself kinda of screaming as I didn't have to watch it to know what kind of pain I was in. I did it all natural with no drugs. I felt everything. I felt his head tear me open. Felt his shoulders come out and the doctor turning him as he pulled him out. I opened my eyes as I heard the baby crying through the TV the doctor was holding him up a little bit as the baby was crying. He laid the baby on my stomach as a nurse cleaned him off with a blanket. "Do you want to cut the cord?" The doctor asked his sister.

.

She looked at me and asked me "Can I?" I just shook my head yes. She cut the cord and then after the nurse picked him up and took him over to a table to clean him up more. His sister pointed the camera at me I looked miserable "Be proud of her Andrew" she said. She walked over to the baby next, as they were checking him out. "Look Andrew you have a son, a son who hasn't met his father yet, who needs his father, we all wish you would come home. We all need you especially him now" she said. That's when the movie ended.

.

I picked up the remote control and pressed stop. I sat up and looked at him. He had a blank look on his face. "Whats wrong baby?" I asked. "Just upsets me baby" he said. "I am sorry baby" I said. "What do you have to be sorry for you didn't miss everything" he said trying to sit up a little bit. I sat up off of him and just let him stand up. I honestly didn't know what to say to him. He walked over to the bassinet and looked at our son. "I missed finding out we were having a baby, I missed him kicking inside of you for the first time, I missed every doctor appointment, I missed seeing him being born, and the DVD doesn't count because I wasn't there, I missed holding him for the first time, I missed kissing him for the first time, I missed bringing him home, I missed him smiling for the first time" he said.

.

I got up and walked behind him wrapping my hands around him. "Yeah but theres tons more things in his life your going to get to see" I said. "Oh yeah" he said kinda being a smart ass. "Yeah like first time he crawls, his first words, him walking, him going to school, him doing father and son things, theres so much more baby" I said. He just sighed "Yeah but I missed him being born" he said sighing. "You watched our girls being born and I didn't get to" I said. "You were still there." He said. "Yeah but they saw and heard you first" I said. He just wrapped his arms around mine and turned and looked at me. "I am sorry" he said. "For what?" I asked. "Not being there" he said.

.

"We both know you had to do what you had to do" I said. "I know baby" he said. "There will be more" I said.

.

"Huh?" He asked.

.

"More babies" I said.

.

"You want more?" He asked.

.

"Don't you?" I asked.

.

"Well yeah we already had this talk I want a couple more remember?" He asked.

.

"Oh I remember. And I do too" I said.

.

"Really? Baby" he asked.

"Yes I do baby. I never knew I could love someone so much than I do with our babies. Yes the girls are gone but I still love them. And I love our son. And its a mother's love that I can't describe but I want more of it. I want more babies" I said.

He just pulled away with a smile on his face. "Thank you baby" he said. I just smiled back and said "When do we start?" I asked. "Whenever you want to, ive told you before its your body baby" he said. "How about now" I said kissing him. As I felt his tongue slide into mine as I kissed him slowly and softly. "Are you sure?" He asked. "Baby we have had unprotected sex since day 1 well day 2 " I kinda of giggled. "What makes you think I want to change that now?" I asked. "I don't know baby" he said.

"Then if it happens it happens baby I don't want to prevent it" I said. "Me either" he said kissing me and then holding me tight. We just wanted to hold each other instead of just jumping each right there on the floor. He just kissed my forehead and looked at me "I love you" he said. "I love you baby" I said. He just smiled at me "What?" I asked. "I still can't believe I am hearing you say it to me again" he said. "I know baby I know" I said as he leaned down and kissed me. We just pulled away I could see the look in his eyes like his heart was healing like being away from me made it crumble into nothing. "Do you want to go scare my sister?" He asked. "Sure why not" I said rolling my eyes

#56 (bonus)

I held him closely even though he suggested to go see his sister I didn't think he wanted to let me out of his arms right now. I had a feeling more happened than what he told me. But I guess I had to trust him and maybe later on tell me. He started running his hands up my back and holding on to me tighter. I missed his hands.. well the good things he did to me with these hands. He was a great guy and honestly the bad stuff that had happened has been a faded memory in my mind. We needed each other. We complete each other. And we both knew it. I felt him kiss the top of my head over and over again. Just soft kisses while he held me tight into his chest.

"Baby?" I asked.

"Yes my love" he said.

"How much do you love?" I asked.

.  
"More than words can describe..more than my feelings can show you... more than anything" he said.

.  
"Why do you ask baby?" He said.

.  
"I don't know I was just wondering" I said.

.  
He pulled away and took his fingers and lifted my chin up. "What's wrong baby?" He asked. I could feel the tears building up in eyes. "Baby whats the matter" he asked. "I just.." I couldn't speak and couldn't get the words out. "Baby your actually scaring me. Did I do something?" He asked. I just shook my head yes as I lunged into his chest as he held on to me. "Baby please tell me; he said. I just started crying. I couldn't help it. He started rubbing his hands up my back. "Its because I left isn't it?" He asked.

.  
I couldn't answer him. "I will take that as a yes" he said. "Baby I know you hate me for leaving I know you do rather you admit it or not. I know you do I would hate myself too. And I do. I hate myself for leaving the one woman I love. The one woman who understands me who loves me. The woman who made me into a better person. And you can tell me every day that it wasn't my fault our girls are not here. Because it is. How could I be so stupid to fight with you while you were already in a high risk pregnancy. To put more stress on you. And look what happened" he said. I wrapped my arms around him tighter.

.  
"I am the reason they are not here. And I am the reason our son is here. He made it because I wasn't there to stress you out or fight with you" he said. I looked up at him and reached the back of his head and smacked him. "Don't you ever fucking say that again" I said. He just closed his eyes he knew he hit a nerve with me. "Don't you ever fucking think you caused oyr daughters that pain. And don't you ever think our son is here because you were not. I had more stress being pregnant with him than the girls. Dont believe me ask your sister. Quite a bit of shit happened while you were gone. But did that phase the baby no it didn't it just showed me he is a strong kick ass person who wanted to come into this world and make a difference.

.  
Rather its just meeting you or taking over the world one day. Hes the one that is the strongest out of me and him. He kept me going. I am the one who almost gave up so many times. And feeling him move around in me. Or if I was crying he would randomly kick me to kick some sense in me. He held on to me." I said. Just looking up at him. I knew my eyes were just as sad as he was. He closed his eyes and I could feel him moan as he pulled the back of my head towards him. Roughly kissing me, feeling his tongue slide into my mouth just going at it. He picked me up as I wrapped my legs around him. As he carried me over to the couch.

.  
He pulled off his shirt and then mine. He slide down my boxers and his as well. He positioned me

back on the couch and got in between my eyes. Just thrusting his cock immediately into me. I arched my back and screamed as it was still sore from this morning and he was being a little rough with it. He just kept pulling in and out hitting my g spot making me moan loud as he lifted one of my legs up around him as he thrust deeper inside of me. I was going to cum and cum fast. From the way I was moaning he knew it too. "Cum on my dick baby" he moaned. I rolled my eyes back into my head as I felt myself twitch and tighten around him.

I squirted and squirted hard. Releasing myself and moaning loud as I did it. I opened my eyes to him still thrusting hard. He leaned down and started sucking on my neck as he growled letting out his babies inside of me. He thrust a few more times and then collapsed on me. Out of breath I said "Now what the hell was that for?" He just kissed my collarbone and looked up at me. "To break the built up tension" he said. "We needed to let it out baby" he continued. "That we did" I said wrapping my arms around his neck as he leaned in and kissed me. This time really soft and gentle. "Now we can talk without hiding the facts" he said. "Yeah" I said. "So what else happened while I was gone?" He asked. "Huh?" I asked.

"You said some shit happened while I was gone what happened?" He asked. I just sighed. "Not good time?" He asked. I just shook my head no. "Ok baby I trust you" he said. "I will tell you tonight. You need to get to know your son" I said. "I need to also reunite with my wife" he said smiling and kissing me again. "MmHm you do" I said after the kiss. "What time does he go to bed anyway?" He asked. "Around 8 or so" I said. "Ok good I have all day to spend with you two. And tonight with you my love" he said. "Yes you do baby" he said sitting up and kissing my forehead. "I love you baby" I said. "I love you my love" he said. "Don't ever think I ever stopped" he said. "I never did either" I said smiling at him as he kissed me. We decided to go take a shower together as the baby had fallen asleep.

I went into the bedroom first as he pulled the bassinet into the bedroom. "I am not leaving him by himself" he said to me. "Good ive never left him alone before and don't plan to start" I said pulling my clothes off and going in to the bathroom. I heard him come up behind me as I turned the water on. Kissing my neck feeling his beard on my shoulder. "Your going to have to get rid of that" I giggled. "You don't like it?" He asked continuing to kiss. "It tickles" I said laughing. I climbed into the shower as he followed. Looking out as he left the bathroom door open. He is going to be one protective dad.

MY MASTER

.  
.  
#57  
.  
.  
.  
.

loved already watching my husband and my son interact with each other. Andrews eyes were lit up in a different way that I have never seen before. It was honestly breathtaking. "Umm baby?" I asked. "Yes sweetie" he said smiling at our son then over at me. "How would you feel about letting your sister watch the baby tomorrow so we can spend alone time together?" His smile like instantly disappeared. "Ok was that a bad idea" I said. "No its not just don't want to be away from him" he said. "Yeah but what I need to talk to you about umm baby we need to be alone" I said. He sighed and laid the baby in the bassinet and came and sat down next to me on the couch. He started running his hand up my thigh and looking at me in the eyes.

.  
"Baby what happened?" He asked. "Just trust me and wait until I tell you" I said. "Baby did someone hurt you?" He asked. I lowered my eyes to my feet as I couldn't look at him. "Baby girl who hurt you?" He asked getting a little louder this time. "I can't say it" I said. "Does my sister know about this?" He asked. I looked up at him tears in my eyes and said "Yes". "Please get her over here. If I can't get it out of you I know damn well she will tell me" he said. I reached over and picked up my cell phone and called his sister. "Hey!" I said. "Can you come over....yeah I am about to start crying.....just please come over.....no the baby is fine...I just need you....alright I will see you soon" I said hanging up the phone. I looked over at Andrew "she will be here in about 2 hours" I said to him. He just looked at me and sighed. Caressing his hand up the side of my face.

.  
"Your eyes baby" I said. "What about them?" He asked. "They look fierce like pissed" I said. "Well someone hurt my wife and she won't tell me who" he said. "Its hard" I said. He just blinked and sighed "I know but we can't keep things from each other. I was away from you for so long and I don't care if its good or bad I want to know what happened or what you went through" he said. "I know baby" I said. "If my sister helps you tell me its ok baby" he said. "Thank you baby" I said. He leaned and kissed me on the lips really soft. I just smiled at him. This was something that I needed his sister for. She experienced it with me and I just needed her. It was about 2 hours when I heard a knock at the door.

.  
Andrew got up and went down the hallway. I opened the door and she was panicking "What what whats going on?" She came in putting her purse on the table. "I heard from Andrew" I said. "WHAT?! Is he ok is he coming back?" She asked. "Hes fine" I said. "Did you tell him about the baby?" She asked. "Yes I know about my son" Andrew said coming up the hallway holding our son. "Oh my God..Andrew...where the fuck have you been?" She asked. "Its good to see you too

sis. But I am good now that I am home. And holy shit still can't get over I have a son. But its a long story" he said. "It better be a good one" she said. "It is" he said. "Are you going to hug me or slap me?" He asked.

"Both" she said going up to him and hugging. "What do you think about your son?" She asked smiling at the baby. "Couldn't be more happier" he said. "Good" she said. "Hes a lucky little guy." She said. "Only because he has one hell of a mom" he said looking at me. "And one great dad" I said. His sister started taking the baby from Andrew as he mouthed to me "Thank you baby" he said. I just smiled at him as all of us moved to the living room and sat on the couch. "Ok sis before you start asking a 100 questions, one ive already told my wife, apologized to her and my son, and she told me a few things what happened while I was gone, with the girls, birth of our son, but.." he looked at me.

"She said someone hurt her and she can't tell me about it" he said. His sister just sighed looking at me "I need you to tell me" he said. She looked at me and sighed at me deeply "Andrew...she..." she said. "Just help me tell him" I said looking at her. "Andrew baby.." I said picking up his hands and looked into his eyes.

MY MASTER

#58

I couldn't help but to start tearing up while looking into Andrews eyes. I knew he was scared of what he was about to be hearing but I had to tell him.

"Ok baby it's hard to talk about it but you need to know" I said

"Ok baby just take your time" he said

FLASHBACK TO WHEN I WAS ABOUT 7 MONTHS PREGNANT

I was lying in bed hurting all over; I was praying to God that I wouldn't go into labor early like I did with the girls. It was just one of those times that I needed my husband. I just yearned for him to



contact me I don't care how but just contact me anyway to tell me he is a live or something. His sister was staying with me she was sleeping in the baby's room until the baby got here. We had already bought most of the things for the baby it was just putting it all together.

It was about 5 am when I heard a knock at my bedroom door.

KNOCK KNOCK

"Yeah" I said

"Hey I am going to run back to my house for a while I need to get something's" she said

"Ok" I said

"Text me if you need anything" she said

"Ok I will" I said as she shut the door and left.

I heard the front door open and close and a few minutes later her car start up and she left. I hadn't been getting much sleep lately. I was actually doing pretty good considering that I haven't heard from my husband in almost 7 months. It was an ongoing night mare. I just missed him. But I had to get some sleep for my baby. I remember falling asleep for a little bit until I heard the front door open and shut. I just figured that she was back. I didn't care to look and see what time it was I just had to get up and go pee. Being pregnant I swear makes you pee like every 20 minutes. Especially after you just wake up it's like an explosion waiting to happen.

I opened the bedroom door and started making my way up the hall a little bit to the bathroom but I saw a shadow in the living room. I figured it was her so I went into the bathroom and went to pee. I opened the bathroom door feeling so much better that I wasn't really paying attention just as I turned to walk into the living room. I passed the living room almost to the kitchen when I felt like someone was walking behind me or staring at me. I hated that feeling I was already paranoid as it was. Before I could turn around I got struck in the back of the head by something and fell to the ground.

When I woke up I was tied to one of the kitchen chairs in the dining room. I opened my eyes and saw a man that I knew was one of my father's so called friends. And another man that I had never seen before.

"What do you want?" I asked

"It's not what we want it's who we want" he said

"We have come for your daughters" he said

"My daughters are fucking dead" I screamed

"Then how do you explain the baby stuff?" he asked

"Umm can't you see that I am pregnant you fucking asshole" I said

"Well what are you having?" he asked

"I don't know I never found out" I said

"But your daughters they really are dead?" he asked

"Yes they died 2 weeks after they were born they were born too early" I said

"Well that makes our job easier" the other man said

"Yeah but it doesn't help the fact she gave birth to girls and from what it looks like got pregnant

really quickly to save herself maybe hoping for a boy” he said

“This wasn’t planned” I screamed

“And my husband doesn’t even know I am pregnant” I said

“Oh that’s right her husband is out doing something’s for the big man” he said to the other man

“What?” the man asked

“This is his daughter and she is married to Andrew Jules” he said

“Oh nice” he said

“No it’s not nice I hate my fucking father” I said

“Yeah but you love your husband” he said coming up next to me and brushing his hand against my face

“You know what the punishment for having a daughter is right?” he asked

“Unfortunately” I said

“Well since I can’t kill you because you might actually be carrying a boy, I can always beat you” he said raising his voice and punching me in the face

“I don’t care what you do to me just don’t hurt my baby” I said

I closed my eyes and these two men just kept hitting me over and over again. They hit every part of my body except my stomach and that was the only thing I cared about. I am not sure how long they were hitting me but I could taste blood in my mouth, running down my nose, and my eyes started to swell.

“Didn’t she just say her husband has no idea she’s pregnant?” one of the guys said

“That’s what she said” he said

“Do you think we should tell her father at least?” he said

“Yes he needs to know” he said

I felt them cut the rope that was holding me to the chair.

“Now be prepared for worse if that child comes out a girl” he said hitting me one more time.

I just closed my eyes and passed out on the floor. I could see blood spatter and spots all over the dining room floor as I just laid there. They walked away opening the front door and shutting it.

They were mumbling about something about telling my father that I was pregnant again. I honestly just wanted Andrew here. He actually can protect me from all of this.

.

## FLASH BACK TO PRESENT

“So that is what happened babe” I said looking at him.

He was beyond pissed that his eyes were blood shot and dilated. He had no emotion or expression on his face just staring at the wall that was behind me. He couldn’t even look at me in the eyes.

“I came back and found her on the floor I picked her up and helped move her to the couch and called the ambulance, they came as quickly as they could and took her to the hospital. She suffered from a broken nose and cheek bone. She had a concussion. And had to get a few stitches on her face” his sister said.

Andrew just looked over at her.

"I need some air" he said getting up off the couch

"This is going to be bad" she said to me

"Yeah I know" I said as I heard Andrew go out the back door on to the patio.

"I will go check on the baby if you want to go talk to him" she said to me

"Ok" I said getting up off the couch and walking towards the backdoor. I opened it and he was sitting in a chair with his back towards me. He was shaking. His hands were gripping the chair and his knuckles were turning white from gripping it so hard.

I walked up behind him and just did what I knew would calm him down. I wrapped my arms around his neck and kissed the side of his neck.

"I love you baby" I whispered in his ear.

I saw his hands loosen a little bit as his left arm let go of the chair and reached up and touched my hand and patted it a little bit.

"I love you sweetheart" he said sighing.

.

"I know I cant make you forget about it but you needed to know" I said

"I know baby I am glad you did tell me" he said

"It just means I have to do what I have to do. No one gets away with doing that to my wife" he said

"Just don't do anything stupid to where you get taken away from me again" I said

"Like I said baby I would have to be killed before taken away from you again" he said

"That's what I mean baby don't do anything to where something might happen to you" I said

"Nothing is going to happen to me baby I promise" he said

He sat up and turned around and faced me

"Come here baby" he said opening his arms out

I walked into his arms and wrapped my arms around his waist leaning up against his chest as he wrapped his arms around me and held on to me tight.

"I am sorry baby" he said

"For what?" I asked

"If I was here that wouldn't of happened to you" he said

"Yeah but nothing happened to our son I could of given two shits if anything happened to me" I said

"I know and I do appreciate you protecting our son that way but I couldn't imagine if something happened to you" he said

"I know baby but it's the past I am here" I said

"Yes you are and I am too, now we can be together" he said kissing my head.

"I am still going to get my revenge" he said

I didn't want to say anything I just let him hold me. I knew he would be upset at what happened. But I had to tell him not just for the fact that I got beaten but the fact my father knows I was pregnant again.

"So let me get this straight then your father already knows we had another baby?" he asked

"Yes i think" i said

"So he knows we had a boy?" he asked

"I dont know about that part. because well something else I got to tell you baby. I didnt want no one to know I was having the baby after that so I checked myself into the hospital under a fake name" I said

He just kind of chuckled

"Thats my girl" he said

"I didnt want no one to know I was there, let alone if we did have another daughter that something else might happen" I said

"Its ok baby" he said

"Yeah I actually bleached my hair out after this happened so that if I did check into the hospital I wasnt maybe reconizable" i said laughing.

"What happened to the blonde hair then?" he asked

"After he was born I dyed it back, I hated being a blonde" I said laughing.

"I dont think I could of pictured you being one baby" he said

"Yeah you would of hated it" I said smiling and leaning up and kissing him

"Has the baby even been out of the house since he was born?" he asked

"Nope" I shook my head.

"Alright well lets keep it that way for now baby" he said

As he leaned in and kissed me sliding his tongue into my mouth and gripping the back of my hair a little bit.

"I think someone wants me" I said smiling

"You have no idea baby" he said

"Yes I do" i said reaching down and grabbing his cock that was growing in his basketball shorts.

"I want it too" I said

"But just to tease you, you have to wait until tonight" I said rubbing the head of his dick through his shorts making it grow until it was fulling recret and then I stopped.

"You tease" he said grabbing my ass

"But you must wait" I said

"Oh yes mam'm" he said

I just wrapped my arms around his neck and pulled him in close to my lips as i just kissed him. We just stood there holding each other like we were dancing but we really werent. We just had our foreheads pressed against each other and looking into each other eyes. Enjoying the moment.

.

.

.

MY MASTER

.

.

#59

.

.  
.  
~Andrew and I went back inside to where we heard little man crying. We both looked at each other because we knew that something wasn't right. We went down the hallway to his room and before we got there he asked me

"Has he ever cried like this before?"

"No he hasn't" I said as we went into his room and saw his sister holding him and trying to rock him.

"Whats wrong with him?" Andrew asked her

"I don't know I just came in here and he was crying like this" she said handing him over to me

"What is wrong little buddy" I said holding him towards my chest and kissing his head.

He wouldn't stop crying for anything. Like screaming bloody murder yelling and crying. He was crying so much that he was having a hard time catching his breath. That I had to blow in face for him to catch it and breath again. And he would just catch his breath and keep screaming.

"Whats wrong with him?" Andrew started getting a little impatient

"I don't know you try" I said handing him to Andrew.

.

Andrew picked him up and tried holding him close and rocking him a little bit.

He reached down and kissed him

"Baby this kid is burning up" he said taking him over to the changing table and laying him down.

Taking off all of his clothes and just laying him there in his diaper.

I touched his forehead and he was burning up.

"Maybe he is just hot from screaming" I said

"Yeah but you don't get this hot, do you have a thermometer?" he asked

"Yeah" I went to his dresser and pulled it out and came back and gave it to Andrew

"You just put it in his ear" I said

"And it takes it?" he asked

"Yes baby here I will show you" I took it and put it up to his ear as Andrew kind of held him down.

I waited a few seconds and it beeped.

"101.3" I said

"See he has a fucking fever" Andrew said

"You don't have to get snappy Andrew" I said

"Sorry but there is something wrong with him for him to have a fever" he said picking him back up and trying to calm him down.

"Here take him I have a phone call I need to make where is your cell phone?" he asked handing me the baby

"On the coffee table" I said

.

Andrew just left and went into the living room. His sister and I just looked at each other more

concerned about the baby than who Andrew was going to call right now.

He came back in a few minutes later.

“Zack will be here in a little bit” he said

“I don’t want him near my son” I said

“Well hes not leaving this fucking house so get over it, trust him, he is a damn doctor” Andrew said kind of yelling.

I get that he was trying to help the baby anyway he could but he was still a part of that fucking colt of my fathers and I didn’t like it one bit.

“I know you are mad at me for making that phone call but like we agreed on before our son cant leave this fucking house right now and this is the only way I know” he said

“But Zack is apart of that fucking thing, don’t you think he is going to tell my father?” I demanded back

“Hes not going to babe just trust him I do and I know you trust me or did you all of a sudden lose that?” he asked

“No I do trust you” I said

“Then trust me on the decision I just made” he said looking at me in the eyes.

“Ok babe” I said

‘Thank you baby” he said still holding the baby in his arms and trying to rock him.

It was about 30 minutes when I heard a knock at the door.

“I will get here take him” Andrew said handing the baby back to me

Andrew walked down the hallway and I heard him open the front door.

“I am sorry to call you like that but we don’t know what else to do” he said as I heard their voices get louder from walking up the hallway into the babies bedroom. He was still screaming and crying. I was holding him close to me.

“Baby let him look at the baby” Andrew said to me

I just clinched my hands around the baby a little bit and kissed him on the forehead and I took him over to the changing table and laid him down.

I stood right there by him making sure that he didn’t do anything to our son that I didn’t like. I felt Andrews hands grip on my shoulders as he was standing behind me.

Zack started taking a few things out of his bag, listening to his heart beat, listening to his lungs, looking in his ears and mouth. Feeling on his stomach, legs and arms.

He just sighed and looked over at Andrew and I.

“He has an ear infection and he is colic” he said

“What the fuck is that?” Andrew asked.

“It just means he cries a lot because he is hurting or in stress because he is sick” Zack said

“How do you cure it?” Andrew asked

“Colic isn’t really curable its something that fades over time, but his ear infection can go away with antibiotics, which I am sure when he starts to feel better the colic will go away as well.” he said

“Are you sure that’s all there is?” Andrew asked

“Yes I am really surprised he wasn’t crying sooner that infection looks like it has been there a few days” he said

“He wasn’t doing this a few days ago?” Andrew asked me

“No he sure wasn’t this is the first time” I said

“Ok well I can get a prescription for you for him and it should be gone in about 5 to 7 days” he said.

“Ok thank you” I said

“No problem” he said

I had to ask him just to be on the safe side.

“Does my father know I have a son?” I asked

“No, hell I didn’t even know you guys had a baby and I was checking up on you a few times while Andrew was gone you hide it really good” he said

“Thanks” I said

“I wont tell no one, I was surprised actually when Andrew just called me.” he said

“Yeah I didn’t know until I came back” Andrew said to him

“I am sorry to hear about your girls though that part your father does know about” he said

“Yeah I know I had a couple visitors while Andrew was gone who beat the shit out of me for having girls” I said

“Wow I didn’t know what” Zack said

“Yeah” I said sighing and going over and picking up my son off the table and wrapping him up in a blanket.

“Try to keep some clothes on him and a thick blanket it will help break the fever and give him some Tylenol” he said to me

“Ok I already have Tylenol its in the kitchen” I said taking the baby and walking out.

I really didn’t want to talk to him any more. I honestly never did like him in the first place I just tolerated him because he was Andrews friend but anyone associated with that group still I don’t trust. And I probably wont even trust him until like Andrew says he actually leaves the group.

I walked into the living room where Andrews sister was sitting on the couch.

“Whats wrong with him?” she asked following me into the kitchen

“He has an ear infection and colic” I said

“Oh poor guy” she said

“Yeah hes going to get some antibioticis for him and Tylenol will help with the fever and calm him down” I said

“Yeah hopefully it does that was so heart breaking listening to him scream like that” she said

“Yes it was” I said almost crying myself.

“Why was Andrew being so snappy about that guy coming over?” she asked

“He is apart of this shit” I said

“What?! And he let him around your son” she said

“Apparently he is getting out too and blah blah blah” I said

“Wow I would of just taken him to the emergency room a few towns over or something instead of calling him” she said

“Thank you that’s what I would have done” I said

“Men” she said

"Yeah I know cant live with them cant live without them" I said

"You got that right" she said

As she helped me give him some Tylenol he actually swallowed it which I was surprised. I heard Zack and Andrew come walking up the hallway and talking to each other.

"Alright man, I will get that prescription back over here I will just sat it on the chair on the front porch don't want to make things to suspicious or something and I will text you after I leave" he said

"OK thanks for coming over" Andrew said to him

"Not a problem. I will see you guys in a couple weeks then?" he asked Andrew

"Yeah man we will be there I will keep in contact with you" Andrew said to him

"Alright talk to you later" he said to Andrew as Andrew closed the front door behind him and looked up at me and I was holding the baby in the kitchen. He had started to calm down some but not completely yet.

He came walking over to me.

"I am sorry I snapped but our son needed help that we couldn't fix" he said

"I know baby" I said

"I am sorry too" I said

He just came over and wrapped his arms around me and held me and the baby close to him,

"That is the worse feeling ever" he said

"Whats that babe?" he asked

"Hearing your son scream like that and you cant do nothing about it" he said

"I know it was heartbreaking" I said.

"I am going to head back home guys" his sister came over to us.

"You are more than welcome to stay" Andrew said

"Yes I know but you guys need to be a family right now" she said

"And your son needs both of you" she continued

"Alright if you say so" Amdrew said smiling

"I will come back and visit this weekend" she said as she hugged us both and kissed the baby on the forehead.

"Thank you for coming though means a lot" I said

"Your are very welcome, I have been neglecting my husband a lot lately so I need to go home and kiss up" she said laughing.

"Take care of that sweet boy" she said kissing his forehead again

"You know we will" I said

"Goodbye guys" she said as she opened the front door and left.

By that time the baby had stopped crying and was a sleep against my chest. He wasn't as hot as he was before so that means the medicine was working. I just looked over at Andrew and smiled.

"Is he asleep?" he whispered

"Yes" I nodded as I walked over to the basinet and laid him in it.

After I laid him down I started to walk over towards the couch where Stephen was. He got off the couch really quick and just hugged me.

"I love you baby girl" he said



"I love you" I said

He looked down at me and kissed me.

"I am so happy to be home" he said

"I am happy you are home" I said

"I am guessing the whole plans you have with Zack are still in full effect?" I asked

"Oh yeah and he told me the same thing that every time he spotted you to check up on you he could not tell that you were pregnant at all" he said

"Did you hide it a lot?" he asked

"No I just hide it really good" I said laughing

"And plus for some reason I didn't show that much I mean when I was 9 months pregnant it looked like I was about 4 or 5" I said

"Really?" he asked

"Yes look" I said picking up my cell phone and flipping through the pictures.

"This was taken a week before he was born" I said showing Andrew

"Wow so tiny baby" he said

"I know right" I said

"You can look through those pictures if you want I took a picture every month of being pregnant and tons after he was born" I said

He just sat down on the couch and started flipping through the pictures. His smile kept getting bigger and bigger with each picture. Until he got to the last picture

"When did you take this picture?" he asked flipping the phone around

"Earlier when you were holding him on the couch" I said

"I love it" he said

"So do I baby" I said leaning over and kissing him.

"See you are a great dad" I said

"If you say so" he said smiling

"I know so" I said

"Thank you baby" he said kissing me

"Anytime my love" I said.

.

.

.

.

.

.

MY MASTER

.

.

.

#60

.

"Oh baby" I yelled from the bedroom as Andrew was in the kitchen finishing up the dishes from dinner. The medicine had been working on the baby and he was passed out cold. And all I could say was that I wanted my husband. I was horny and hot and just wanted him.

I had this little black lingerie outfit that I bought a while back to wear for Andrew for when he came back (That was when I was hoping he would be back sooner than he actually was)

While he was cleaning up the kitchen I snuck into the bedroom and dug this outfit out of the closet. I decided to put on these thigh high black leather boots. I got changed in the closet before I yelled for him. I laid up in the bed, well not really laid up just kind of sat up on my knees wearing the outfit and waiting for him.

"Yes bab..babay..." he said coming into the room and seeing me wearing that.

"You want to have your way with me?" I asked grinning at him

"Uh huh" he said stripping all of his clothes off. i dont think I have ever seen him strip out of his clothes that fast before, and then jumping off the bed.

"Oh God baby" he said crawling up next to me and kissing the side of my neck. running his hands up my rib cage.

"God this outfit..is so damn fucking hot" he said.

"I figure you would like it" I moaned as he was starting to bite on my neck.

"You want it rough tonight baby?" I asked him

"Thats up to you sweetie I am already hard and wanting you just looking at you...shit you do that to me no matter what" he said moaning into my ear as he started working his way down my neck to my collar bone.

He laid me back down on the bed and started kissing me really roughly.

"Oh no baby" I said

He just gave me this look like he didnt want to stop.

"I am going to do things to you that I have been wanting to do for a long time" i said smiling at him.

"Oh really?" He said

"Yes really" I said as he rolled over on his back and I got on top of him.

"But first I said....remember what I told you before you left that one day.." I said

"I am going to get pay back?" he said as the smile from his face disappeared

"Yup" I said smiling

"Baby really tonight I havent been home long...not even a full day....I umm...I just want to be with you" he said kind of scared

"Are you scared?" I asked

"I just dont know what to expect just nervous" He said

"Now imagine what I felt like but worse" I said handcuffing his hands to the bedpost

"Baby Please" he said begging me to stop

"Fucking sucks doesnt it Baby" I said

"I told you I was sorry baby" he said

"It hurts me that I did that to you" he said begging as i tied his feet to the other end of the bed.

"God Damn baby" he said pulling himself almost breaking the head board.

"Andrew you knew about this before you left" I said

"I didnt think you would actually do it tonight, the first fucking night that I can actually go to bed with my wife. Fuck baby God Damn it. I am so sorry I really am. I cant express how much I am" he said getting tears in his eyes.

"I just want to go to bed with my wife, damn it thats all I am asking for tonight" he said

"It sucks doesnt it baby that the second time we have sex from you being back like the second time(Well actually this is the third) we had sex in the beginning of our relationship you came into my room, tied me to my bed, and beat the shit out of me" I said

"Baby and I felt bad every day afterwards I still do. I just dont want you feeling like I do after you do this to me. Punish me another way baby" he said

I climbed on top of him and looked at him square in the eyes.

"I just wanted you to feel some what of what I felt that night. I am not going to hurt you the way you hurt me. I am not going to punish you the way you punished me, but I did want you to feel a little bit of what it was like for me that night, not knowing the unknown, but just being scared and nervous of what you were going to do to me. I am not going to beat you or whip you because i love you way too damn much." I said

He just closed his eyes and opened them.

"Thank you" he said

"For what?" I asked

"Just showing me what kind of a person I used to be that I never want to be that man again" he said

"I hope not" I said

"No way baby I could never do that again to you or any one" he said

"Good" I said

"So can you untie me?" he asked

"Nope" I said smiling

"Why not?" he asked

"Because I am going to tease the living shit out of you" I said smiling

He just smiled and laid his head back as I started kissing the side of his neck. Working my way down his collar bone to his chest. Running my tongue down the middle of his chest to the edge of his stomach. Feeling his dick getting hard underneath me but I wasnt just going to jump on and ride him I was going to make him beg for it.

I got to the end of his happy trail and felt his dick right under my chin. I gazed over it with my mouth just feeling it throbbing and wanting to be sucked. I blew on it a little bit running my tongue on the edge of it. Teasing it. Hearing him moan as he was still tied to the bed.

"You want me to suck your cock baby?" I asked him

"Yes baby I do" he said

"Tell me" I said kissing the base of cock going up and down up his thighs as he was begging for me to do it.

"I want your mouth on my dick baby, I want you sucking my cock" he said

"That's not good enough" I moaned going back up his thighs running my tongue along.

"I want to feel your tongue hugging my dick baby, I want to feel your tight lips sucking hard on it as I am throbbing inside your mouth" he said

"A little better but not good enough" I said as I reached up and grabbed onto his chest and kind of clawed him still kissing his stomach trying to make him think his begging wasn't good enough that I was just going to start kissing his stomach leaving his dick there. But in reality it was working I was fucking horny and hot for him but I didn't want him to know that.

"I want you to please baby suck me, run your tongue up and down my shaft baby, sliding it and out of your mouth. feeling your warm breath on my dick as it's sliding down your throat..Oh god baby please" He begged

"I think I can live with that" I said as I opened my mouth and just slide his dick right in. I felt it throb and twitch in me as he was moaning loud.

"Fuck baby Fuck" he moaned

"That good huh?" I moaned

"Oh shit baby god yes, your going to make me cum" he said

"That's the plan baby it's about you right now" I said

I continued sucking really hard and sliding it deeper and deeper down my throat feeling the saltiness of his precum sliding around my tongue.

"Oh god baby I am going to cum" He yelled

"You want me to swallow it baby?" I moaned

"Please baby do it" he moaned and grunted at the same time

I slide his dick down my throat and sucked it hard as I started hearing him moan loud and started tasting his cum in my mouth. and I got to say it shot a good 4 loads down my throat. I licked his dick cleaning up every bit of it.

I looked up at him as he was leaning up a little bit still tied to the bed.

"God damn baby" he said

I just giggled and looked up at him as I whipped the side of my mouth. A little bit of it seeped out.

"That was the best fucking blow job ever" he said as I climbed up on top of him

"I could do better" I giggled

"I look forward to that" he said as he laid his head down as I kissed him on the lips

I reached up and uncuffed him as his arms feel as he sat up and hugged me.

"I love you baby girl" he whispered in my ear.

"I love you baby" I said

"Now let me untie you all the way and get out of these clothes and you can have your way with me" I said smiling

He just smiled and said

"Just do one thing baby?" he said

"What's that baby?" I asked as I untied his feet.

"Leave the boots on" he smiled at me.

I just smiled back and stripped only leaving the black leather boots on and climbed back into bed.

.

“Make love to me baby” I moaned as he was laying on top of me. I was already naked except for my leather boots and he was too. He was kissing the side of my neck as I was moaning deeply in his ear. He knew how to hit me on the right spots and make me just shiver in excitement. Even though he had only been home about 24 hours, it was like he had never left. I mean we have been doing it like rabbits to make up for lost time but he remembered every inch of my body, used his tongue and lips to caress them perfectly. Feeling his hot breath on my neck as he was using his tongue to make little circles on my head. God did it feel so God that I knew I was drenching our bed sheets already.

He guided himself up against my pussy lips as he just sighed and moaned in my ear.

“God baby you are already so wet” he moaned

“You do it to me baby” I whispered in his ear.

I guess saying that made him just want him. I felt him push himself into my pussy as I arched my back and just slammed it all the way in, not really giving me any time to adjust myself just bam all the way inside.

“Oh my god baby your pussy feels so good” he moaned

He was going slower and deeper. Pulling himself in and out of me letting me feel his dick stretch out my pussy as it was tightening around it. Just gripping on to it like it was heading for dear life.

He was rocking his hips a little and grinding at the same time. It really did feel amazing just letting him hit my g-spot and making my legs just shiver.

“I love you baby” he whispered in my ear.

“I love you” I said

This was the type of sex that I have been waiting for. I knew that we had to get some tension, upset sex out of the way when he got back and we did that. But this is the actual sex I had been waiting for that romantic sweaty love making sex.

“Look at me baby girl” he said as I had closed my eyes a long time ago just enjoying him thrusting in and out of me.

I opened my eyes to him just staring into my eyes,

I felt his arms go under my shoulders lifting me up a little as he kept staring into my eyes. Those deep green sexy eyes that any woman could just melt into and they were all mine. I could feel the water building in mine as I just relaxed feeling him make love to me. Something I had been wanting been missing for so long.

He didn't ask why I had tears going down my eyes he just kissed them again and then kissed me sliding his tongue into my mouth. I just let the tears go down my cheeks as I opened my eyes and looked into his. I think he knew why I was crying that's why he didn't ask he just kept rocking his cock into me as I wrapped my arms around his whispering in his ear.

“I am going to cum baby”

“Cum with me then baby” he moaned

He did start to speed up a little as he both were about to release on each other. My chest started rising and falling faster as I gripped on to his back he kissed me sliding his tongue in mouth as I moaned through the kiss feeling myself milk him

He leaned back and closed his eyes and grunted and moaned loud as I felt him shoot his cum up inside of me. I felt the sweat start to drip off his body and land on my stomach.

He looked up at me leaning up so that he was straddling me. He looked into my eyes and took his hand and whipped away the tears that were starting to fall again.

“Don’t cry baby” he said

“I am sorry I cant help it” I said

“I know baby” he said

“I know it hurts me to see you cry though” he said

“Just hold me close tonight baby that’s what I want” I said looking up at him

“You can have anything in the world baby and I would go through hell to get it for you” he said kissing my forehead and rolling over next tome.

He pulled me into his chest and I don’t know why but I started crying again.

“Shhhh baby” he said rubbing my back

“I know baby I know but I am home now there is no need to cry my love” he said kissing my forehead

“I just...I just” I said

“What baby you can say it” he said

“I just missed you so much baby” I said

“I know god I miss you like crazy” he said

“That is a year of our relationship I can never give back to you” he said

“I wish I could baby fuck I wish I could” he said

I don’t know why I just kept crying to the point that I just let him hold me all night long.

I guess I had fallen asleep and got woken up to an empty bed. It made me think that all of this that happened with him was a dream that a stupid vivid dream and I was panicking until I smelt something from the kitchen. I knew that smell all to well, that was Andrew's blueberry pancakes, so he was in reality here and this wasn’t just a dream.

I was still naked so I grabbed a pair of boxers and tank top slipped them on and headed to the kitchen. He had his back towards me as he was standing over the stove just in his boxers. No shirt, nothing else but boxers. I saw the basinet in the kitchen too which means he got up with the baby and I am thankful for him trying to let me sleep in but since the baby was born it was a habit to get up early every morning with him.

“Hey my baby” I said wrapping my arms around his waist.

“Good morning baby” he said turning around and looking at me

“I thought I would surprise you with breakfast in bed” he said

“Aww that’s sweet of you baby” I said

“Well it was the babies idea I just went along with it” he said smiling at me

I just smiled back at him as he turned around to flip the pancakes. I looked in the basinet and the little buddy was laying there wide awake staring at the mobile that was hanging over him.

“Hello handsome” I said to him

He just cocked a little smile and was kicking his feet going crazy. He either was happy to see me or he was enjoying the mobile too much. Either way it was cute.

“Do you want to eat in here or in bed or what sweetie?” he asked

“Umm it doesn’t matter sweetie” I said looking over at him.

He had a stack of pancakes and it was apparently time to eat.

“How about in the living room?” he asked

“Sounds good baby” I said pushing the basinett into the living room as Andrew followed me in there with two plates.

He sat them down on the coffee table and went back to the kitchen.

“What do you want to drink baby?” he yelled

“Umm orange juice is fine” I yelled back picking up my plate and plopping down on the couch.

He returned and sat the glass of juice on the table, sitting down next to me and picking up his plate.

“Thank you baby for breakfast” I said

“No problem baby this is just the beginning” he said

“Huh?” I asked

“Well lets just say the next few weeks since we don’t have nothing to worry about until then I am going to spoil and love you in more ways that you can imagine” he said

“What about when the few weeks are up and after that stupid event we have to go to?” I asked

“I am going to come right back home and pick up where I left off.” he shoved a piece of pancake in his mouth chewing it and swallowing then setting the plate down on the table again.

“Baby” he said looking over at me.

“I have a lot of making up to do. I have a years worth of stuff to make up for and I am going to start today. I missed your birthday, Christmas, our anniversary, the birth of our son, everything and I saw it in your eyes last night how much me not being here hurt you, don’t get me wrong it hurt me too, but when you cried when I made love to you showed me I missed out on a lot, especially making love to my wife and I am going to make up for it” he said

“I hope you don’t have any objections to it?” he asked

“No sure don’t” I said smiling and eating another piece of pancake

“Good” he said picking up his plate again and finishing his breakfast.

I honestly couldn’t wait to see what else he had in store. I knew that the next few weeks would hopefully be peaceful until him and andy get down to their little plan. But I was honestly excited and anxious to see what he was going to do

.

.

.

MY MASTER

.

.

.

#61

.

.

The next few weeks actually went by faster than what I anticipated. It was nice having my husband home and getting to be with him again. But the moment of truth was coming and I trusted him about the situation. Zack had come over a few times since today and they stayed outside a lot talking. Andrew told me that they had this plan of what they were going to do and how it was going to all work out. He never did give me much detail which that is what scared me the most, but I guess I have to put my trust in his hands and deal with it. He still claimed that my father didn't know that we had a son so I don't know if that's a good thing or bad thing considering I technically did give birth to girls before him. Which I am sure since that I am going to this thing it will be brought up because I have a feeling my father will pull me and Andrew both a side and pretty much well let us have it.

We got his sister to come over to the house and watch the baby while we were gone. I could tell by the look on her face that she was just as nervous as I was and she wasn't even going. But to get this shit out of the way I guess I had to go, trust me I didn't want to go. But I got dressed like I had done before in the past. It had been over a year since I have seen these people, including my mother and father, and I guess I needed to look my best.

I have lost all of my baby weight and I was back down to the size I was before I got pregnant (Both times) and I put on this dress that Andrew had bought me over a year ago that I had never worn before. It was a red V line dress that went down a little past my thighs. When I sat down it didn't flash my down stairs or anything so I guess I was good in that part. I do give Andrew credit every dress he bought for me was classy and not trashy. It hugged my body good and showed off what I had but it didn't make me look like a cheap hooker or anything. I straightened my hair and pinned my bangs back on the top of my head. Put a little bit of make up on mostly just some black eye liner and mascara, and blushed my face lightly with some foundation.

I grabbed a pair of black heels for the closet and put them on. I haven't worn heels since the last function we went to so this is going to be interesting to say the least walking in these things. I came out of the closet to Andrew coming out of the bathroom and he just smiled and sighed at me. He was dressed in a black suit, a nice blue silk tie, and some leather boots (Which I had never seen him before that dressed up especially do one of these things, I mean he did for our wedding but that was about it).

"You look nice" I said

"Thank you. You look pretty gorgeous" smiling at me

I just smiled back.

"I figured I might as well put one of these dresses to use, haven't really worn any in a while" I said

"Yeah I know"

I went back into the bathroom and sprayed some of the perfume that I love lightly on my chest. Even though I shouldn't be dressing up for this crap I should just be a bitch and go in my pajamas, that's honestly what I have been wanting to do. That's what I feel comfortable in. But just to make Andrew happy I did it.

I walked into the living room while his sister was feeding the baby and trying to put him to sleep. It



was almost 8 o'clock and approaching his bed time. She still had that scared shitless look on her face but what I can do I am sure I had the same look. I went over and kissed the baby on his head and told him that I loved him and would be back soon. This was the first time I was leaving him since he was born and it was honestly crushing me inside. I hated the fact that I had to leave him, even though I trusted his sister, I just didn't want to leave him. Andrew was right behind me and did the same thing. I am sure it killed him to leaving our baby just as much as it did me.

"Are you ready?" he asked

"Yeah lets go" I sighed

We walked outside to the car. I haven't been in this car since before he left. I actually kind of missed it. It was a nice car. He opened the car door for me as I got in and he closed it. He walked around got in and started the car.

"Zack is supposed to meet us in the driveway" he said

"Ok"

"This is actually at my father's house?" I asked

"Yeah"

The whole drive there we were silent. It was about an hour to my father's house and we didn't say a single word to each other but I guess there was nothing to say to one another. I just had to do and follow him and let him do his thing.

I recognized the neighborhood right away, this wasn't the house I grew up in but it was my father's second house that we had been to before. I could feel my heart pounding in my chest like it was throbbing and wanted to just jump out and hit the bottom of the car floor.

We pulled next to the drive way there was already so many cars here that there wasn't no room to actually park in the driveway except out in the street.

"Trust me?" he asked

"Yes I do babe"

"Ok good let's get this shit over and done with" he said opening his door and stepping out. I opened mine and got out. I could see Zack standing about 20 feet up in front of us leaning against his car. I kind of zoned out when we walked up to him and them two shook hands and started talking about something. I was so fucking nervous that their plan wasn't going to work and something else bad was going to happen. Because that is just my fucking luck.

"Come on sweetie" he said as I just snapped back into reality as he had his hand open for me and I took it with mine walking up next to him.

We got to the door way and I had started recognizing a few people from last year. They would just smile at me like I was a piece of meat, which to me I was, they all think that I gave birth to girls and girls only so they would have their way with me tonight. But hate to break it to them that shit is not going to happen.

I spotted my mother in front of us, as Andrew was talking to another gentleman.

"Hey how are you holding up?" she turned around and asked

"Could be better" I said

"I know and I am sorry"

"Why are you sorry?" I asked

"I just am about everything. I couldn't imagine losing a child let alone two"

"I know it well I am not going to lie it sucks, it is really heartbreaking and I feel like I have let myself and my husband down that they came out too early and I couldn't do nothing about it" I said

"Honey it's not your fault don't blame yourself they came into this world for a reason and they left this world early for a reason, rather they know the reason or not, or let alone we know the reason, things do happen for a reason" she said

"Thank you" I honestly didn't think my mother had those types of words to say. Let alone had the mind for it.

"I would like you to meet my husband" she said tapping a man on his shoulder as he turned around.

"This is John"

"It's nice to meet you" he said extending his arm out for me to shake it. I smiled up at him and shook his hand.

"I am sure you know my husband Andrew" I said pulling Andrew by the arm to turn around.

"Yes I do it's nice to see you again Andrew" he said shaking his hand

"Like wise John" Andrew said shaking his hand.

There was like an awkward moment there that no one really knew what to say. So we just all turned around and went inside. It was a familiar place as the people were already in full swing about everything. I had a few guys walk by grabbing my ass and whistling at me. I just gripped Andrew hand harder as he turned and whispered

"I know babe"

I knew that guys were going to try to approach Andrew on who gets to take care of me (In a bad way) first and there already was. He had two guys already ask him and Andrew would just nod and tell them when the time comes. When the time comes what the fuck? Did he actually want this to happen or was he just pretending to go along with it until everything happened. I saw a master sitting on the couch with his pants down on the floor. With I am guessing one of these slaves on top of him riding him. To me that was very trashy but nothing I can do about it.

I looked up to a young woman standing next to Andrew and smiling at him.

"It's nice to see you again" she said grabbing his ass.

I almost punched her in the face for what she did but Andrew saw how I guess my eyes were about to bulge out of my head and mouthed "Don't".

I just clinched up my fists and rolled my eyes. But if she does it again your damn straight I will be all over her ass in a heartbeat I don't give a shit.

She walked by him pretending to strut her ass in front of him so that he would notice her but he didn't give her the time of day.

"What the hell was that about?" I asked him

"She was one of the girls I picked up for your father"

"Oh why did she say that to you then?"

"Because she thinks I like her" he said

"And?"

"I don't fucking like her please don't start your jealous stuff now, even though it's a major turn on

please don't" he said

I just stood there respecting his wishes as the moment but I would be beating her ass if she tried something else.

"I need to speak to you" Zack said coming up to Andrew

He looked over at me and gave me this look like stay the fuck here and don't move. They stepped about 20 feet away from me as I just stood there in the hallway. Waiting.

This guy probably in his late 30's came walking up to me.

"I hear there is a waiting line for you?" he said

"I am sure there is" I said being a major smart ass

"I want to be able to get on that sexy body of yours"

"Get in line" I said

"Oh I am the first one I just paid that man 20 grand to be the first one" he said grinning and pointing at another man who was smiling and winking at me.

I just closed my eyes and sighed, Andre better hurry the fuck up with his so called plan.

"Not yet Mr. Johnson" Andrew said wrapping his arms around my waist and kissing my neck

"Andrew Jules I am surprised you haven't dumped her ass yet for giving you fucking girls, I would of sold my slave off a long time ago if that shit happened to me" he said

"It was tempting but I do love a good piece of ass when I have one" Andrew said

I just rolled my eyes at him. Really that's all he could come up with.

"Mr Jules and his fucking slave" I heard a voice come up the hallway and I knew who it was right away.

"Hello" Andrew said shaking his hand

"I see you two finally made it, you know this party was a welcome back for you Andrew and a well punishment for your bitch" he said

"Yeah I know it is" Andrew replied

"Let me ask you something...would you ever consider selling her off. I know a lot of people who wouldn't mind taking that crazy nut off your hands, that way you can find someone who can actually give you a son maybe, because I figured you do want kids, most guys do by the time they hit your age, but how can you trust this bitch on giving you one, when she gave you two girls. I do some people who would love to take her, they wouldn't make her a baby making machine but they would treat her like the slave she is" he said looking at Andrew

"I would rather keep her"

"Really my son?" he asked

Are you fucking shitting me, he calls Andrew his son but he won't acknowledge that I am his own daughter. That's fucking bull shit.

"Well you know I still want out of this" Andrew said

"And you know I did what you asked me and I think it's time for me to move on"

"I give you this you did do what I asked and I am glad you did you did find some really nice pussy.

But are you sure I am going to ask you one more time?" he asked

"I am sure I want out" he said staring into his eyes being dead serious.

"Ok there's one thing that has to be done well besides letting your wife get her punishment" he

said smiling at me

I just cocked a fake ass smile at him.

“You need to come with me alone” he said to Andrew

“I am not leaving her” he snapped back

“That’s the only way”

I just looked up at him and touched his arm.

“Go” I said

“Are you fucking nuts, you know what these bastards will do to you if I am not here next to you” he said

“Just go Andrew I can handle myself”

He just looked at me like I was fucking stupid for agreeing to this, but I had to let him just go. I dropped his hand as he looked at me. He sighed and kissed my cheek.

“Be careful, I love you” he whispered in my ear as he turned and walked off with my father.

.  
. .  
. .  
. .

MY MASTER

.  
. .  
. .

#62

.  
. .  
. .  
. .

I stood up against the wall just watching Andrew and my father walk away into another room. My heart was pounding like crazy and I was starting to breath heavy. I just had to calm myself down and just barewith it all. I kept seeing other masters’ stare at me with those needy eyes or thirst. I knew what they wanted to do and so did they. I knew that there was a line for them to have their way with me. I just prayed it didn’t happen. I could hear my father and Andrew arguing from here. Not really understanding what they were saying but loud mumbling you could tell they were arguing.

“Well Well are you ready for tonight?” a man walked up to me and asked

“As much as I will ever be I guess”

He knew that I was scared shitless and didn’t know what to even say to him. He brought his hand and rubbing the back of it along my cheek.

“Don’t be scared it will be over before you know it with him and you will be with someone else” he said

“What are you talking about?” I asked

“Your husband this will be his last night on earth my dear”

“What?”

“You didn’t know. Well he knows the rules you cant leave. Fucking ever.” He said grabbing my arm and jerking me towards him.

He started kissing my neck as I just started crying. I knew my father was a no good asshole. But if I started fighting this man things would be worse. I knew I had to get away from him. So I started to come up with some bull shit.

“How about you give me my punishment Master?” I whispered in his ear.

“First of all who’s Master am I?” He demanded

“Yours” I looked into his eyes begging so he knew I wasn’t bullshitting with him.

“Good Slave. How do you want to be punished?”

“I think you as my master should decide”

“Good answer slave. Let’s go upstairs” he said yanking my arm and pulling me behind me up the stairs. I had to think of things quick.

He opened the first empty room he could find and threw me on the bed. While he locked the door. He tore my dress off and pinned down my legs and started slapping me across the face.

“This is for being a fucking bad slave” he said slapping me again

“This is for giving my brother a fucking daughter” he slapped me again

“And a second one you dirty whore. You fucking disgust me”

I just zoned out for a minute thinking of our daughters and our son at home. I had to get this man off of me. Let alone if what he said is true Andrew would be alive by the time he was done with me.

“What do you have to say for yourself you fucking slave” he said pulling my arms up causing me to sit up and him look into my eyes.

I looked deep into his eyes and all of a sudden they changed. He just stopped and pulled me close into his chest.

“Now I know why that son of a bitch loves you”

I just started crying.

“I want to go home. With my husband and to my son”

“What did you say?” he asked

“I thought you guys had daughters”

I looked back and him and shook my head.

“We did. But I got pregnant again before he left he didn’t even know until he got back”

“So you have a son at home?” he asked

“Yes we do”

“Why the fuck didn’t Andrew tell anyone?”

“He wants out and he wants to be out for good”

“He should have just told them he has a fucking son. We got to go get him. They are going to kill him” he said getting up and throwing my dress at me. It was tore but it was wearable. He took my hand and ran with me down stairs.

“You didn’t punish her very long” another man said as we were running by.

“Where the fuck did they take Andrew?” he asked

“Basement. Why?” the other man asked

“They have a fucking son together. They can’t touch him”

“Shit Go!” he yelled as we ran and the other guy ran after us. We ran down to the basement and of course it was locked.

“Hold on Tom has a key to it he is upstairs” the guy ran back upstairs as I could hear Andrew yelling out in pain.

I don’t get why he wouldn’t just tell them we have a son. It would make things so much easier right now. It took that man forever to come back with other guy. And the whole time I could just hear him hitting or doing something to Andrew that was causing him to cry out in so much pain. It was breaking my heart.

“Get the fuck out of the way” they said coming back down the stairs. He unlocked the door and pushed it open. It was one of those heavy stone doors that took all three of them to slide open.

“Let him the fuck go!” I yelled running into the room.

“You fucking get that slave back” my father yelled

“She has every right” Tom yelled

I ran over to Andrew he was tied to a chair with chains and they were beating him with everything imaginable. Whips, chains, leather straps.

“What the fuck” my father yelled as I walked up to Andrew he had his head hanging down I took my hand and lifted it up. His eyes were already swollen and there was blood everywhere.

“I am here baby. Unfucking tie him” I yelled.

The other guy did it while Tom was talking to my father. I felt Andrews hand run up my back and I pulled him close to me.

“I am here baby we are going home”

“How do you not know she is not fucking lying to save her husband” my father yelled

“Then come home with me and see my son for yourself” I yelled at him

“I will make a deal with you if there is no baby no son you can kill Andrew and me too. But if there is you let me and my family go!” I yelled

“I will show you everything birth certificate, pictures any fucking thing you want to see”

My father just glared at me and sighed

“Alright you got one fucking chance” he said dropping the whip he had in his hand to the floor.

Andrew stood up as I helped him. He wrapped one arm around my shoulder as he wrapped the other around Tom.

I heard the other two guys whisper.

“I can’t believe they had a son. This is the first male born into this in a long time. Decades.”

“You know Leon could get into deep shit for this”

I just walked Andrew up the stairs and out to the car. Every one followed. Including my father.

Everyone was staring at us. Word had spread that we have a son and my father was beating him for no reason. They were all trying to help me walk Andrew out to the car. Someone handed me a wet rag to clean his face a little when we got outside. Someone even handed me a bag of ice.

Since we have a son apparently it has made Andrew a head master. That he was respected by all

instantly and they were showing him respect while we walked out to the car.

I put him in the passenger seat. I started cleaning off his face getting most of the blood off. It had already started to dry so it was a little tougher to clean it off. But I got off everything the best I could.

“I didn’t know he was going to do that baby” he mumbled

“I know I didn’t either that’s why I had to tell them about our son”

“Thank you” he said

“You saved me I thought he was going to kill me”

“Don’t thank me let’s just get home so we can prove we have a son and leave this shit behind us” I said to him.

I put his seat belt on him and took the car keys out of his pocket. I pressed the bag of ice on to his left eye that one looked worse than the other and shut the door. My father and a few other guys I am sure of which one was Leon were in a black car parked next to us waiting to follow me. I got in the driver side pulled the seat up because Andrew was way taller than me and started the car. Put it in drive and went straight home.

We pulled up in the drive way and all of the lights were off in the house except the living room lamp. His sister must be still asleep. I walked over to the passenger side and opened the door for Andrew. He climbed out and wrapped his arm around me as we started walking to the front door. My father and his associates started to follow us.

I opened the front door and his sister looked up and her mouth about dropped.

“What the fuck happened?” she said coming up to the other side of Andrew and helped me guide him to the couch.

“Don’t worry I am fine” Andrew said sitting down

“Who are these people?” she asked

“They are here to verify something” I said

“Let me guess that your son is real” she cocked an attitude towards them.

“Yeah” I went back into our son’s bedroom and picked him up. Even though I knew he would cry I just let him. Let me rephrase that he was screaming. I went into Andrew and I’s bedroom and went in the closet where the lock box safe I had and got out the baby’s birth certificate.

I walked back into the living room as he was still screaming. Andrew got up off the couch and walked up to me. He scooped him out from my arms and held him close to his chest. Kind of rocking him a little bit.

.

.

.

MY MASTER

.

.

.

#63

.

I stood there and watched as my father's mouth about fell to the floor. He knew that he was in the wrong and I had a feeling was going to either start kissing major ass or walk off. Andrew kept kissing the top of the baby's head and trying to calm him down. I have never heard him scream like this before. Except when he was sick a couple weeks ago but this was higher pitched like he was suffering.

"Let me have him" I said to Andrew as I took the baby from him and went and sat in the rocking chair that was in the living room and tried to calm him down.

"Do I get a fucking apology now?" Andrew growled at my father

"I am just going to say that you are a new man now in this and you have my deepest respects just because you have an instant title that's higher than mine"

"Do you actually think I want in this, to put my fucking family in this?" he yelled

"I was away from them for a year a fucking whole year that I will never get back. Yes I didn't know that she was pregnant but if I was here I would have known, I would of fucking known I was having another child. Let alone a son. I missed it. I fucking missed him being born and I can never get that back"

"How do we make this up to you?" another man that came with my father asked.

"I don't know if there is anything you can do. Unless you can go back in time and change everything to where I was with them. That is fucking impossible but that is what I want"

"And the fact that I want fucking out of this I want to have a normal life without you assholes interfering with it. Trying to come after my wife and I. Which speaking off who was the fucking assholes that came after my wife and beat the shit out of her while she pregnant. That is what I want to fucking know" he yelled

"I will have to get the names of the two that did that" my father said

"You got to give them credit they didn't know she was carrying a boy" he said

"It doesn't fucking matter you don't touch another man's wife without his permission if you want to throw rules back into my face" Andrew yelled again

"And I am going to take a wild guess and say that it was your idea to send them over to beat her"

"Yes" my father said

"Then that means you will get it as well. You want to be something that you are not. If you played by the rules that the other master's set forth none of this shit that you are pulling or have pulled exist and you fucking know it. I want to know why?"

"I wanted to prove a point. You had orders to only make her your slave but you married her and fell in love with her .Had kids with her. That was something that was uncalled for and not part of the originally agreement"

"And you can't fucking help who you fall in love with. And I love that woman more than she will ever know" Andrew said

"And since I sent you away I had to still make my point across even though she was left behind with your daughters" my father said



“So your point meaning that you had to beat her without my permission that you had to go to the fucking hospital where my daughters were. That I couldn’t stand, you didn’t have to go see them.”

“No I didn’t but I need to verify myself that you had daughters”

“Doesn’t fucking matter. Well you know what for now get the fuck out of my house. I still want out of this shit and I will get it. Since I technically have a higher title than you, you will get your day and so will all of the mother fuckers who touched, threatened, or even disrespected my wife”

“So that means you will too?” another man asked

“Excuse me?” Andrew said

“You touched her too in the beginning, you hurt her, and you threatened her” he said

“That I did. And I have to live with that for the rest of my life that’s punishment enough for me. Now get the fuck out of my house” he yelled pointing at the front door.

All of the men left and didn’t say a word. I know that Andrew was the type for getting revenge and it was going to happen either way. He wasn’t going to let no one get away with what they did. He was a loving man and cared deeply for his family.

Just as he was about to shut the front door as they were leaving Zack rushed through the front door.

“Bro what are you doing here?” Andrew asked

“I had to come find you. I heard what happened at his house and make sure nothing serious happened”

“No nothing did but I still want our plan to take in effect. This shit and their god damn cult is going to come to fucking end once and for all” he said

“Are you sure that’s what you want?” he asked him

“I am positive”

“Alright let’s make it happen then” Zack said

Andrew and Zack walked outside to the patio and shut the door behind them. I couldn’t ask for a better husband but I don’t know if he has gone too far with it. Since they know we have a son can’t he just forget the violence and walk out of it and come back to his family. But he is a stubborn man and will do what it takes to get his revenge.

It was a couple hours before they came back inside. His sister had another left, the baby stopped crying pretty much instantly after my father and his men left. I had fallen asleep on the couch but I could hear Andrew and Zack talking while he was walking him to the front door.

“See you Saturday” Zack said

“Ok” Andrew said closing the front door.

He walked over to the couch and kissed me on the forehead. I looked up at him and smiled.

“How is your face feeling baby?” I asked as I was softly touching it.

“Its fine” there was still some dried blood on it. But it really didn’t look that bad.

“Can we go to bed now?” I asked

“Yes” he reached down and picked me up and carried me bridal style back to our bedroom and laying me softly on the bed. I saw him get undressed into just his boxers. He climbed on the bed and slide off the pajama pants I was wearing and pulled off my shirt.

“I am guess you want to sleep naked tonight?” I giggled.

“You got it”

He slid down my panties as I pulled the blanket back a little. He climbed off the bed and took off his boxers off and climbed up behind me. I rolled over and looked at him as he pulled the blanket over us. He pulled me close into his chest as our naked bodies pressed into each other. I could hear his heartbeat it was very slow and comforting.

“I love you baby” he whispered kissing me

“I love you”

“Everything is alright. I made a promise to you that I was going to take care of your father and I will”

“I know”

He kissed the top of my head and pulled me close into his again. As we held each other and drifted off to sleep because the baby would be waking us up in a few hours.

MY MASTER

.  
.

#64

.  
.  
.

It was Saturday night already and Andrew had not told me anything that was going on. Every time that I asked him he would just change the subject really fast and dodge me at all cost. I had just put the baby down in his room and was slowly walking into our bedroom. I saw Andrew putting a gun behind his back in his pants and then strap a few knives on each side of his ankles. He looked up at me and I guess I just stood there shocked as if I had been caught doing something I wasn't supposed to be doing.

“You don't have to do this. You can walk out now they know we have a son and you can just walk out” I said to him

“I know but I want it to end all together.”

“You would risk your life right now. You are home. You have a wife. You have a son. You would risk all of that just so you can what kill my father. Who gives a flying fuck about him? I surely don't!” I raised my voice louder which I know was pissing him off.

“Don't ever say that again. I am doing this to protect us. So no one will come after you and our son again!” he got up and started walking towards the dresser to get his car keys.

“You are done Andrew you are done with it. Just let it be. Be happy. You have us.”

“It doesn't work that way. You know I don't quit until a job is done. That's not how I was taught” he demanded

“By who the Marines? You are not in the military any more. You are in the fucking civilian world!”

“It doesn't fucking matter I finish everything I start” he said

“If that were true you wouldn't have fallen in love with me and married me”

I think I honestly struck a nerve with him. He just turned and glared at me. Like I was about to die myself.

"I have to go" he said pushing by me and walking out into the hallway.

"I won't be here when you come back!" I shouted

That stopped him right in his tracks and he turned around and looked at me.

"Are you fucking serious?" he glared at me

"Yes" even though I wasn't. But I didn't know if he was believing me or not.

"After everything I did to keep us together and be a family you would leave and take my son with you" he said

"Yes" I said as my eyes started to tear up.

He just closed his eyes and lunged at me. Shoving his tongue into my mouth and pressing me up against the wall. I just wrapped my arms around his neck and let him push me up against the wall and grind myself against him.

He started kissing down my neck and biting it hard. As I could feel him getting hard against me.

"You wouldn't leave" he whispered in my ear

"Try me" I kind of figured that this little fight was turning him on. I felt him pull down my pajama pants. I wasn't wearing any panties so I just was naked from the bottom down. He leaned back and undid his belt and zipped down his zipper. Pulling his cock out which was beyond ready to get inside of me.

He lifted me up as I was against the wall and I wrapped my legs around him. He pulled his cock up against my pussy as he just rammed it in.

"You want to leave me. Leave this cock that you enjoy so much" he growled in my ear. As he pulled out and rammed inside of me again.

"Maybe" I grinned

"You love me to fucking much" he smiled as he started pushing and pulling himself in and out of me. I couldn't help but to just grip on to his shoulders and moan in pleasure as it did feel good. It was honestly amazing there was no doubt about that. I could feel my pussy juice just start running down my inner thighs as he was just going to town on me. I could feel my legs start to shake as I knew it was before long I was going to cum all over him.

"That's it baby cum for me" he whispered in my ear.

"I am baby I am cumming" I moaned as I released myself on him. I just him grunt as he pushed inside of me one more time and I felt his hot sperm just release up inside of me. He pulled away and lowered me to the ground.

"Don't play with me next time baby I know you are not going to leave" he smiled as he pushed his cock back into his jeans and zipped them up. I reached down and pulled up my pajama pants that were still around my ankles.

"You know me all too well" I said kissing him.

"You forget that I do" he said through the kiss.

"Don't worry baby I will be back and we will finally be able to be a family. And back to the husband and wife that I miss so much"

"I can't wait" I said as he turned around and went to the front door. I followed him so that I could lock it behind him.

"I love you" he turned around and kissed me again

“I love you”

As he open the door and left. I locked it behind him and went back to the bedroom.

.  
ANDREW'S POV

I got into my car and started driving over towards Zack's house. I knew that she wouldn't leave me. I knew she was just playing with me so that I would stay. I know one day she will understand. I hope anyway. Or why I am doing this. Why I have to just end it for good. Yes I could just say fuck it and leave and they can't do a damn thing about it. But I don't want anything else to happen to anyone. No other girls. No other wives. Nothing. And it is also pay back for what the fucking asshole did to her when she was a kid. I am not stupid she might not have told me everything but I am not fucking stupid I know what kind of man he is. And I can take a wild to what that asshole did even say to her when she was growing up.

But hey now she has me. Yes I might not have liked the way that I met her and some of the things, some of the fucked up things that I did to her in the beginning. But I love that woman more than I think she will ever know. And I love my daughters we had together. I still have not brought myself to go see them. Shit they are buried next to my father. I haven't even seen his grave yet. But I know that one day I am going to have to. One day she is going to make me. I didn't even get to say goodbye to my daughters and I think that is what hurts me more right now to the point I want to kill that son of a bitch. He took me away from them when they needed me. When shit my wife needed me. I couldn't imagine what she felt like when they did pass away or what she was even feeling being by herself and with me not there with her.

.  
I needed to teach that fucking asshole a lesson. And he knew what he did was wrong. Shit he could have at least told me about what happened to my daughters. Hell even told me that she was pregnant again. Well I can't blame him on that part no one knew that she was pregnant again. She did hide it so well. I am proud of her for that. I just fucking missed it.

“Ugh!!” I said slapping the steering wheel.

That fucking asshole made me miss the birth of my son. That is something that I could never get back. That fucking asshole. I just want to grip his neck in between my hands and just strangle him and watch him take his last breath in front of me. And fuck it that is what I am going to do. He was a cruel old bastard that had done too much to my family. Especially my wife. Just thinking about her just brings a smile to my face. I could be in the most fucked up mood and just the image of her in my mind just makes it all go away. God I love her. So much. I knew that in the beginning she thought I was a crazy psycho path and I am sure that I was.

.  
I had done stuff to bad people that I couldn't ever imagine telling her about. I mean even before I was working for her father. I was in the military. The Marines, none the less as a scout sniper. I fucking killed bad guys for a living. Which yeah I am sure they deserved it but I killed them. I took them away from their families, who I am sure knew what they did but it's just the thought that I killed them. I took a life.

But then I met her. I knew after the night I made love to her that she was different. She was the

one that I was supposed to be with the rest of my life and I couldn't continue what her bastard of father wanted me to do. And the only way to protect her from him was to marry her. I knew that one that I would be marrying her.

I just knew it. But I had to marry her so fast in order to protect her. I know now at least I hope she knows why I married her so fast. Especially after she found out that her father was at the events we were going to. But I had to protect her. She has brought out so much in me that I never knew I had inside of me. She brought out a whole different, well emotional side. Some people might think of me as going soft or a cry baby. But fuck them. I don't care. I am starting to show emotions that have been built upside of me for god knows how fucking long and being with her they are releasing I guess you would say. And I couldn't be happier about it.

I can't wait to spend the rest of my life with her. She is the woman of my dreams. The woman I want to grow old with. To have more children with. I know I can never replace my daughters. They were my first born even though they spent little time on this earth they were my babies and I will love them until the day I die and never forget about them. Then I have my son who god help us all is a split image of me. I want him to be proud of me. I know that I am going to take this secret to my grave and I hope that my wife does too. I will never tell my son or any other children what kind of person I was before their mother.

That is something that I would be ashamed of to tell my children. I want them to be proud of me and that is what I hope for anyway. I know that killing that asshole will help me release the anger I have built up inside. And will finally give my wife the closer she needs. Especially him not alive any more she doesn't always have to worrying about someone watching her or stalking her. Or the thought of someone laying another hand on her. And I don't want to put my son through any of this shit any more, or any other children we have in the future.

I am just going to fucking do it.

I pulled up to Zack's house as he was already waiting for me in the drive way. He opened the passenger door throwing and duffle bag into the back seat hitting my son's car seat.

"Ready?" he asked

"I have been ready a long fucking time" I said shoving the car into reverse

MY MASTER

Andrew had been gone almost 5 hours and it was honestly driving me up the freaking wall. It was making me so nervous and paranoid that I couldn't take it anymore. I wanted to honestly just pack up my kiddo and go over there but I know that if I showed up Andrew would have a fucking heart attack. I paced back and forth in the living room just waiting for him to walk in the door. It had been way too long since he has been gone. Way too long.

ANDREW

When got to her asshole of a father's house and just sat in the car for a few minutes. I knew what I had to do and so did Zack. He looked over at me as I just starring off into space.

"We can leave you know?" he said

"No I have to do this. I have to do this not just for me but for her as well"

"I know bro. He is a fucked up individual but..."

Before he could even finish I cut him off.

"No I am doing it. We are doing it. Get out!" I said opening the car door.

We parked a few houses down but I am sure that ass hole knew that I was coming for him. We walked straight up to the front door and knocked. I could feel the gun in my back pants just throbbing I knew that shooting him wasn't going to solve it, that was just going to be an easy kill, not a torture like he did me. Especially my wife.

He actually opened the door which was a surprise.

"I have been waiting for you to show up" he said stepping back and letting us in.

"Let's go to my office" he led the way down the hall way to this room. He opened the door and went straight to his desk and sat down. Zack and I followed him we didn't want to sit down. We just stood in front of his desk glaring at him.

"Let have it" he said

"You know what I want" I snapped back

"And I can have it now"

"That you can Mr Jules that you can but I have a feeling you want more"

"Yes"

"I want you to stop this whole shit. Stop everything. Well no matter what you say any way it is going to happen"

"I figured as much. What you want me dead. Do you honestly think that killing me is going to stop other people from doing what I have been doing all of these years?"

"No but it will be a start" I said grabbing the gun from behind my back and pointing it right at his face.

"Do it. Fucking kill me Mr. Jules"

"No that would be too easy. I want you to suffer like I did. Especially what she went through"

“What my daughter, you wife, she was a no good daughter that didn’t respect me one bit”

BAM.

I shot him in the shoulder. As he just grabbed his shoulder and looked up at me.

“Don’t talk about her that way” I shouted

“Maybe if you got to know her you would see what kind of a person she is!!”

“I didn’t and still don’t have time for that little skank” he mouthed as I shot him again this time in the right leg.

“FUCK!” he yelled

“Does it hurt? Does it fucking hurt” I yelled at him

“I never asked you to be in her life right now, shit I don’t want you near her. But you could of at least apologized to her for everything you did to her. She is hiding something else from me that I know you did”

“What you want me to say that I bet her. Yes I fucking did. She enjoyed it.” He cocked a smile and I couldn’t take it any more just snapped. Trying to lunge for him but Zack pulled me back.

“Make him suffer Andrew don’t go for the kill just yet”

He was right I was going to make him suffer.

“Tell me” I demanded

“That when she was 8 she was touched and felt up by her uncle. I let him do it. She might not have told you because she might not have remembered but I let him. She enjoyed it. She didn’t scream out in pain or nothing she laid there like a good little bitch she was”

I shot him again in the other leg. I couldn’t believe he would let someone do that to his own daughter.

“What the fuck else do you want Mr. Jules?” he growled out in pain.

“It is what I am going to do. I am a head of you right now and I will destroy this. I will make it no more. And as of right now Zack is dismissed from his title he is no longer a servant to you”

“I will be dead any way what is the use of him” he snapped back

“But I will not just kill you yet. You will bleed out in pain and suffer just as much as my wife did” I said grabbing him by the collar of his shirt and dragging him to the ground. He was shot in both of his legs so he couldn’t walk anyway.

Zack and I dragged him down to the basement to where he tied me up that day that he beat the shit of me and I was going to do it to him.

Zack and I tied him up to a wall post that was there. That you could tell was used for torturing slaves or other men. There was dried up blood on the floor and the smell just smelt like death in here.

“I will take care of him Andrew go home to your wife” he said glaring at him.

“I will after I torture him”

I couldn’t remember everything that I did to him. But I used every tool and whip or chain that was in the basement on him and just beat him over and over. He was hanging on by his last breath just looking up at me with the eyes just to kill him. We had been down there for hours and hours. I didn’t even notice when two men came up behind us and tried to pull me down to the ground.

“What the fuck is wrong with you idiots?” I yelled

“That is our boss and no one fucks him up”

“I am your god damn boss technically now so fucking get off”

“I don’t fucking believe that one bit” as the guy swung at me and the other at Zack. We were fighting each other on the ground and this ass holes wouldn’t stop.

We just kept hitting each other. Trying to make one or the other back down. But it was literally getting impossible. I had to think fast and just do it. I grabbed the gun that I had put in the back of my pants and tried to point it at him but it was knocked out of my hands by other guy. I looked over and Zack was laying on the ground I didn’t know if he was dead or not. It was me against them two. I tried to grab the gun again but they kicked it across the floor. I had to get up and fight to get my way.

I just remember punching one while the other punched me. I was at the point that I was fighting for my life and I was going to win. I looked up after hitting one of them to the ground and the other guy he had the gun pointed right in my face.

I just had a flash forward to my future. I saw my wife my son and it looked like a few more babies. They were all in the back yard playing and laying. It looked like our old house. I just sighed.

“Don’t fucking move” he demanded I stood up and started to raise my hands up in the air and acted like I was going to cooperate with him.

He was bleeding down his face. And I am sure that I was too. I could feel it running down my nose. I looked at him straight in the eyes and he was going to kill me if I didn’t act fast. I had to do something and something quick.

BAM BAM BAM BAM.

My vision went blurry and I remember falling and seeing my wife .There was no way she was here I was dreaming it but all I wanted to do was close my eyes.

.  
. .  
. .  
. .

MY MASTER

\*TWO YEARS LATER\*

“PUSH” He screamed at me as I could barely hold it any more. I was in labor and pushing out another child. I looked over at the doctors and they just kept telling me to go that I was doing great.

I had my eyes closed as I felt a familiar hand holding my right thigh up. I looked up and Andrew was smiling at me. He leaned over and kissed my forehead as I felt another contraction coming on



and I had to start pushing again. I could feel the baby tear its way out of me. We didn't want to know the sex of the baby just wanted it to be a surprise. I could feel the head come out as I felt the shoulders as well. And the doctor pulling the baby out as I just relaxed and fell back into the pillow.

I could hear the baby scream and cry as the doctor lifted the baby up in the air. I looked over at Andrew and he had tears in his eyes and a huge smile on his face. He leaned over and kissed me right on the lips and guided his hand up my cheek.

They took the baby over to the table and cleaned him or her off. I still didn't know the sex of the baby. We agreed before the baby was even more that I wanted Andrew to tell me. He let go of my hand and kissed my forehead and walked over to the baby. The doctor was sewing me up and getting everything changed out as Andrew was just standing there admiring our new addition. He looked over and smiled at me. He came over to me and placed his lips on mine.

"It's a boy" he whispered in my ear and I honestly couldn't help but to smile. I wrapped my arms around his neck as we kissed again. I did have a feeling deep down that it was another boy. I just knew.

"I am going to go tell everyone they are out there waiting" he finally said to me shortly after they brought over our son to me.

"Ok baby" I said looking up at him and smiling.

"I will be back. I love you"

"I love you"

He kissed my temple, then the baby's forehead and walked out of the room.

#### ANDREW'S POV

I walked into the waiting room and before even going in. There was a glass window that you could see into. I saw my sister with our other son and I saw my wife's mom and her husband John. Since everything happen her mother and her husband left everything too. I did end up getting shot that night but only in the shoulder because my wife came to my rescue. It was her that I saw and after that asshole shot me she gave him a bullet to the back of the head. After seeing that I was ok she went over and gave her father two more in the chest.

She wanted to make sure that son of a bitch was dead and she did. She never told me why she came to the house but I knew she had a feeling that if she didn't I wouldn't be alive today. She killed her own father even though he was an asshole to save me. I knew that she always loved me but doing that showed me how much she does love me. She would actually kill for me. I just smiled thinking about her, how she just gave birth to another son of ours and I couldn't be happier. I opened the waiting room door and my son looked up he was sitting on the floor playing with some cars that my sister bought him to keep him busy. He was almost 3 years old.

"Daddy!" he said getting up and running towards me. I knelled down and caught him as he flew

into my arms.

“Hey buddy” I said kissing the top of his head. He wrapped his little arms around my neck as I walked all the way into the waiting room.

“So is the baby here” my sister asked

“Yes he is here” I smiled

“What another boy!” she smiled

“Yes it’s a boy” I said smiling as everyone came up and hugged me.

“Do you want to go meet your new brother” I asked my other son

“Yeah” he said. I just smiled and turned back towards the hallway.

No one followed me and Andrew Jr. I guess they wanted to give us some privacy as a family.

Which that was perfectly fine with me. I walked back into the room and she was just a beautiful as I remember leaving her. She had this glow about her that was amazing.

“Mommy!!” he yelled trying to jump out of my arms and fly into hers.

“Whoa wait a minute buddy. Here I will sit you down next to mommy” she was still holding the new baby and smiling really big to see both of us. I sat down next to him kind of by her legs. As she was looking at the baby.

“Do you want to meet your brother?” she asked Andrew Jr.

He just nodded and crawled up to her but to the other side.

“So what do you think?” I asked him

“He is too small to play with”

We both just busted out laughing.

“He will grow bigger like you baby” she said kissing him on his head as he just laid his head on her.

I had the perfect family. Except one thing was still missing. Our daughters. Our oldest son does know that he has sisters he doesn’t fully understand I don’t think of why they are not here.

Because sometimes he will ask why can’t he see them? But we do go out and visit them often.

After I was released from the hospital from getting shot I didn’t even ask to go see them I just went there with my wife and our oldest son. I knew it wasn’t fair that I hadn’t visited them but I just couldn’t bring myself to it. But now I can and we visit them often. I had the perfect family that I always wanted and dreamed of and I couldn’t be happier about it.

AMELIA

I was happy and exhausted after giving birth. Andrew was actually there for it and I knew he was thrilled. He did technically see the birth of our daughters but they were yanked out of me so fast either one of us knew how to react. And well he missed the birth of our son. He was thrilled when I

told him I was pregnant again. I wasn't shocked because we had honestly been trying for another baby ever since he was released from the hospital from being shot. I just had a feeling that night to go over there even though I knew Andrew would get mad at me I had to do it.

I got our neighbor to watch our son which later on we ended up becoming good friends. I remember walking down to the basement and saw Zack lying on the ground. My father tied up and looked like the living shit bet out of him and another guy I didn't recognize on the floor. And then a man pointing a gun at my husband. I had brought a gun with me. I just had to bring it and I don't know why. I had never shot a gun in my life. That was the first and last time I was going to do it. I creped around and heard a bang and saw my husband drop to the floor holding his shoulder. I had a rage inside of me that I couldn't help I just shot that man in the back of the head and watched him drop.

I ran over to Andree and he had a pulse and was breathing. He was just shot in the shoulder which was an easy fix. I called the police and ambulance and told them everything.

I walked over to my father and looked at him straight in the eyes. He was still alive and he knew that I was there.

"This is for everything. Go to hell where you belong" I said looking at him and put the gun right up on his chest.

He closed his eyes as I pulled the trigger not once but twice.

He was dead.

I hid the gun and ran back towards Andrew. And just waited for the ambulance and police to get here.

KNOCK KNOCK

I look up and saw Zack come through into the room. I smiled. I honestly thought he was dead that night but he was just knocked unconscious.

"Care for some company?" he said bringing in some flowers.

"Of course" I smiled

"So I hear you have another son Andrew my man" he said looking down at the baby

"Yes we do" Andrew said

"I am happy for you guys. I really am" he said hugging Andrew And then me.

"So are those for me?" I asked

"No they are for the baby you know I hear they like flowers" he smiled

"Asshole" I mumbled

"Mommy that's a bad word" I heard from our oldest son. I turned to him and smiled.

"I know but Uncle Zack deserved it" he just clung to me even harder. He was always a mommy's boy and Andrew and I didn't know how he was going to react once our other baby got here. He was really clinging especially when I had doctor appointments, or went to the store by myself he

was sit on the living room and scream for me.

“So what is his name?” Zack asked

“Do you want to tell him or you want me to?” I asked Andrew

Andrew just nodded.

“His name is Zachery ” he said to Zack. I think that honestly just melted him.

“You guys didn’t have to do that” he said

“We wanted to” I said as I lifted the baby up and let Zack pick him up.

“You are the god father to our son and now to our newest son. It is only right that he is named after you” I smiled.

“Thank you that means a lot” Zack said.

After everything happened. Zack had become one of Andrew and I’s good friends. At first I didn’t like him or the idea of him but he turned out to be a great guy. After we found out we were having another baby we did move back to our old house. Apparently his sister had been by cleaning it every month. She and Andrew both claimed we were going to move back there some day. Her husband would mow the lawn and everything. And to be honest it did feel wonderful being back there. I really did enjoy that house. And I was glad to be back there.

I was released from the hospital and Andrew brought little Zack and I home. Zack was already there with little Andrew. Zack does watch Andrew a lot especially when we wanted to go out by ourselves. He was actually getting pretty serious with a girl and to test her I saw she brought her over to the house to baby sit little man.

He can be a handful but he can also be the sweetest little boy. And I guess she passed his test because he proposed to her the other night.

“Welcome home little buddy” I said as we pulled up into the driveway. He was another split image of Andrew

Andrew opened the back seat for me as I climbed out and he reached in and got the baby.

I walked in the house to TV going and toys up and down the living room and hall floor.

“What the fuck happened?” Andrew said taking his sunglasses off and setting them on the table.

We hear laughing coming from little man’s room so we all way that way. I open the door to Zack on his hands and knees and little Andrew on his back and hitting him on the head with a stuffed animal.

“Andythat is not nice to hit your uncle like that” I said

Zack just laughed and pulled little man off of him and said “It’s alright”

I just smiled and took the car seat from Andrew and carried the baby to his room. Since we were back in the old house the boys had their own room. I laid the car seat on the floor and sat down in front of him. He was perfect. Both of my sons were perfect. I just couldn’t help but to stare at him. I just wanted to stare at him all the time. I was the same way when I brought home little Andrew, I

still am that way. I just watch him for hours some times. Just watching him play or even sleep. That might sound crazy but knowing I made him with my husband is the most amazing feeling ever.

I felt Andrew kiss the top of my head as he sat down next to me.

“He is perfect isn’t he?” I said

“Beyond perfect” he said pulling me closer into him and kissing my temple.

I had the perfect husband and two perfect amazing sons.

“When can we have another one?” I smiled and asked Andrew

His mouth about dropped in shock but smiled.

“I think you just like being pregnant” he said

“That and I love babies. I love the babies me and you make together”

“I know baby I love our babies too. But it is all up to you my love you know that?”

“I know. How about in 5-6 months?” I smiled

“Sounds perfect baby” he kissed me on the lips as I felt his tongue slide into my mouth.

I never would have thought that I would be marrying a man that kidnapped me, raped me, and bet me but I did. I love this man more than I ever loved anyone else. Besides our kids. Ever since everything went down no one has ever bothered us, contacted us or come near us. My mother and I talk all the time. She has become one of my best friends and we act more like best girlfriends than mother and daughter. But I couldn’t ask for a better relationship with her.

Andrew and I’s marriage went back instantly to the loving husband and wife we were before. We rarely fight and if it is, it is over something stupid like who loves each other more just so we have angry make up sex. Which that was how our newest son was created.

I wouldn’t change my life for anything. I wouldn’t change how I met my husband. Even though I know he is my soul mate and I would have met him eventually. I wouldn’t change it because I would maybe still be waiting for him to come into my life. I love him. I love everything about him. And I love the beautiful children he has given me.

.  
. .  
.

THE END

Thank for you Support

MARTINO PDF